

## 2<sup>nd</sup> Timothy-3

**Lesson #80**

**Series # 469**

**2Tim 3:13, Phil 3:19**

- I. Freedom Through Military Victory:
  - A. 1<sup>st</sup> Lt. R. B. Thieme III, Anti Tank and Scout Platoon Leader, EXE officer C Company, Exceptional Meritorious Service.
- II. 4 Characteristics of Reversionism continued:
  - A. Review Mechanics of Reversionism:
    1. Stage 1 == Reaction & Distraction
      - i. This is the presence of reactor factors in the life
        - a. Discouragement
        - b. Boredom
        - c. Disillusion
        - d. Loneliness
        - e. Self Pity
        - f. Frustration
        - g. Failure to respond to discipline in the local church.
        - h. Failure to understand the principles and functions of the local church resulting in personality conflicts.
        - i. Failure to realize that all members of the Royal Family of God are in this life with an Old Sin Nature but no 2 people have the same area of weakness and benefit from grace
        - j. Rejection of the authority of the Pastor Teacher.
        - k. Hypersensitivity and lack of objectivity under rebuke or reprimand
        - l. ETC., many also can occur outside the local church.
        - m. Mental Attitude Sins
        - n. Vengeance seeking to build happiness on another's unhappiness
        - o. Distractions luring the believer away from consistent function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception.
        - p. Social & Sexual distractions
        - q. Family Distractions
        - r. Health distractions
        - s. Gossip Distractions
        - t. Policy Distractions
        - u. Drug or Alcohol Addiction
        - v. Mental Illness
        - w. Academic or Mental Incompetence distracting from the recovery process.
        - x. Contemporary History Reactions with inability to cope with historical disaster resulting in entering reversionism and being on the wrong side of history.
      2. Stage 2 == Frantic Search for happiness
        - i. No one reacts to life without looking in another direction for happiness.
        - ii. Based on the trends of the Old Sin Nature
          - a. Toward Asceticism == Holy Rollers and Programs around the Church and Legalistic Systems of Works without Bible Doctrine.
            - i ) This always goes to lack of doctrine and emphasizes some sort of victorious experience
            - ii ) Holy Rollers, legalism, Works Programs, spirituality by self denial, discipleship, one shot declarations, loving everyone everywhere in essence naive stupidity.
          - b. Toward Lasciviousness == Raising Hell constantly, drunkenness, debauchery, chasing, drug abuse, nymphomania, homosexual activity.

- iii. These are all the things which people do to find happiness to replace Bible Doctrine.
- iv. As a result of this Frantic Search for happiness which always fails there is stage 3
- 3. Stage 3 == Operation Boomerang
  - i. This intensifies the first stage of reaction
  - ii. When you go out on your own and try to produce your own happiness by your own ability it will always bounce back to you.
  - iii. This will intensify whatever the original reactor factor was in the first place.
  - iv. This is the point where Emotional Revolt of the Soul begins.
- 4. Stage 4 == Emotional Revolt of the Soul **Rev 2:23**
  - i. The Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul has many areas and the emotion is designed to RESPOND to the content of your Right Lobe.
  - ii. In Emotional Revolt of the Soul you will see:
    - a. Long haired males
    - b. Short haired females
    - c. Hippies
    - d. Anti Establishment
    - e. Anti Law
  - iii. Emotion is the female part of the soul designed to respond to the male part of the soul which is the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
  - iv. Emotional Revolt of the Soul is the emotion being led astray by the Old Sin Nature and not responding to the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
  - v. Emotion has no:
    - a. Doctrinal content
    - b. Rationality
    - c. Mentality
    - d. Character
    - e. Integrity
    - f. Norms and standards
    - g. Not Designed to respond to the thinking of the Right Lobe not to take over the soul.
    - h. When the emotion takes over the soul then these things are removed from the soul.
    - i. This is women's lib function
  - vi. Emotional Revolt of the Soul can result in the Sin Unto Death.
  - vii. Emotion of the reversionist resists Bible Doctrine and bible teaching.

**2Cor 6:11**

**v11: Oh you Corinthians we, Paul, Timothy, Apollos, teach you Bible Doctrine, our Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul is enlarged with Bible Doctrine and we teach from Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of our Soul.**

**2Cor 6:12**

**v12: You are not limited or hindered from learning Bible Doctrine and spiritual growth by us your teachers but you are limited by your own emotional pattern.**

- viii. The believer is commanded to separate self from reversionistic **BELIEVERS** involved in Emotional Revolt of the Soul.

**Rom 16:17**

**v17: Now I urgently appeal to, exhort, comfort, encourage, beseech or energetically urge you advancing or mature Believers in the Royal Family of God, keep your eyes on or mark or be discerning or take critical notice of being alert with regard to, those weak believers who keep on causing dissensions, divisions, apostasies and temptations or strife and hindrances or offenses, trapping by causing enticement of people to get out of fellowship contrary to the Bible Doctrine which you have consistently learned from a Pastor Teacher, IN FACT, keep avoiding, shunning, separating yourself or turning away from them.**

**Rom 16:18**

**v18: For such reversionistic believers do not obey or serve as slaves to our Lord Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ but their own emotional empty hidden responder patterns serving themselves, and by good, pleasant, bland words or sweet speaking masking a fraudulent purpose and clever speeches or smooth and flattering speech of hypocrisy false teachers deceive or seduce away from truth into error, the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul of those ignorant of Bible Doctrine**

- ix. Emotional Revolt of the Soul causes the emotion to respond to the Old Sin Nature and takes over as dictator of the soul and becomes the aggressor and neutralizes everything in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul so that the person eventually becomes, neurotic, psychotic or psychopathic.
    - a. The emotion becomes a tyrant and shuts out Bible Doctrine and short circuits the entire Grace Apparatus for Perception function and the believer living in this Status Quo becomes a totally confused person as he moves toward more intensified problems related to psychosis and neurosis.
  - x. This is the stage where the individual has his emotion as his god and his attitude is characterized by hypersensitivity.
5. Stage 5 == Negative Volition toward Bible Doctrine
- i. As a result of all these things there is a pronounced negative attitude toward bible teaching and bible doctrine.
    - a. This opens the vacuum in the Left Lobe of the Soul through which comes the doctrines of demons and all the concepts of evil.
  - ii. It is characterized by indifference or apathy toward the right Pastor Teacher
    - a. This person is too busy for Bible Doctrine
    - b. There are ANTAGONISMS or personality hangups toward the Pastor Teacher or with others in the congregation.
  - iii. Failure to use the grace provision of the Grace Apparatus for Perception including failure of assembly in the local church
  - iv. Failures to use the rebound procedure consistently and to come and have no concentration, academic discipline, lacking poise and objectivity and force the pastor to THROW YOU OUT.
  - v. There is inability to handle prosperity and disorientation to life and the factors of living or Logistical Grace whereby God keeps you alive in order that you might reach the objectives of the Spiritual Life of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and even Ultra Super Grace and dying grace.
  - vi. This person often gets involved in an active campaign to discredit or destroy the Pastor Teacher or the principle of authority related to the ministry of any Pastor Teacher.
    - a. When a believer leaves a congregation he must do so without being disruptive or antagonistic.
    - b. When you are in a local church and do not like what is going on there simply GET OUT and go somewhere else and whatever discipline the Pastor Teacher has coming which is DOUBLE discipline immediately becomes yours and he goes on without any negative influence.
    - c. In essence when you do anything to try to disrupt or destroy the ministry of any Pastor Teacher you are providing for him GREATER BLESSINGS.
    - d. The only concern that the dissatisfied believer has is to get out of the way of any Divine Discipline coming to the Pastor Teacher.
6. Stage 6 == Blackout of the Soul

- i. This results from opening the vacuum in the Left Lobe of the Soul whereby the Evil doctrines of demons infiltrates the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and drives out all the accumulated Bible Doctrine.
- ii. This person finds himself:
  - a. Pro United Nations
  - b. Anti Law Enforcement
  - c. Anti Military
  - d. Pro Socialism
  - e. Pro Communism
  - f. Anti Capital Punishment
    - i ) All murderers, rapists, drug pushers, child molesters should all be taken to their home and put out on the front lawn or sidewalk or Pool by in the courtyard of the apartments and all parents and friends brought out to watch while they are cut into 4 parts and then all the family and friends must walk between the pieces.
    - ii ) This WILL cut down on violence in criminality.
    - iii ) Violence is always wrong in everything including revolution.
    - iv ) Killing is only authorized by the word of God in 2 categories:
      - a) Execution of Criminals
      - b) Military killing the enemy.
        - (i) The greatest killers here should be the believer in the Royal Family of God in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace or Ultra Super Grace.
  - g. Anti 2<sup>nd</sup> Amendment
  - h. Conscientious objector to military service
  - i. Pro Government interference with free enterprise.
    - i ) This is a violation of human freedom to interfere with business in any way.
    - ii ) Federal government was never designed to interfere with freedom or free enterprise in any way.
- iii. There should never be any interference by government with freedom for the individual.
  - a. Freedom says you are able to go as far as you can on your abilities and desires as long as you don't break any laws or interfere with someone else's freedoms.
  - b. The government mandating seat belts in cars, helmets for motorcycle riders, insurance for driving, insurance for health care, ETC ETC is totally a violation of biblical principles of the Laws of Divine Establishment.
  - c. People are in support of these things because they are under the influence of this world's EVIL policy and have Negative Volition toward the absolute truth of Bible Doctrine.
  - d. When the Left Lobe of the Soul is filled with evil then this person supports all these ridiculous things which occur today.

**John 12:40**

**v40: he has blinded their eyes, he has hardened their hearts with Scar Tissue of the Soul, lest they should see with their eyes (reversionist & Cosmic Dynasphere == no evangelistic response), unless they perceive with their right lobe and be converted and I restore them.**

7. Stage 7 == Scar Tissue of the Soul
  - i. This is hardness of the Right Lobe of the soul where the circulation of Bible Doctrine is stopped and it is removed and EVIL moves into the Right Lobe of the

Stream of Consciousness of the Soul from the Blackout of the Left Lobe of the Soul.

8. Stage 8 == Reverse process reversionism
  - i. This person becomes:
    - a. Pro Communism rather than pro nationalism
    - b. Anti Law Enforcement rather than pro Law Enforcement
    - c. Pro socialism and welfare function rather than Pro Laws of Divine Establishment and freedom.

- B. Fame acquired on the basis of Dishonor
  1. This is human fame which is based on some system of cheating, lack of integrity, or dishonor.
  2. For the reversionist Dishonor is a way of life for them.

- C. Under the influence of Evil:
  1. In 1976 there was total exploitation of the bicentennial with surfacing or great evil, internationalists glorified, freedom submerged, races glorified.
  2. Freedom there was submerged by greater evil.

### III. Final Destination of the Royal Family of God:

- A. Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and continued advance to Ultra Super Grace.
  1. Most believers never make it to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace
  2. Many reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and never move on to Ultra Super Grace.
  3. Many never reaching Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace never know the blessing of dying grace.

- B. Here we find Paul looking forward to his continued advance to Ultra Super Grace.
  1. God the Holy Spirit now brings Paul to talk about the failures in reversionism.
    - i. Carnality is not failure since it was set aside by the cross IF rebound is used for INSTANT recovery from carnality.
  2. Reversionism is total spiritual failure.
    - i. This is the believer who is mixed up and anti doctrine and opposed to what the bible is teaching and to the Plan of God.
  3. This is to be encouragement for these believers who will lose all of their predesigned Super Grace package of blessing and eternal rewards.
    - i. The emphasis is on what these failing believers will have in common with those who reach the goal of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and Ultra Super Grace.

- C. This is the final destination of all members of the Royal Family of God no matter their spiritual Status Quo in time.
  1. This is perfect security for all Royal Family of God members in eternity under the principle of Ultimate Sanctification.
    - i. Ultimate Sanctification is receiving a Resurrection Body minus the Old Sin Nature minus Human Good and no residence in the Lake of Fire.

- D. Philippians were primarily Roman citizens living in Greece and this was a Roman colony were all retired officers and enlisted men from the Roman army went.
  1. This gave the city very special privileges as a Roman colony and these people lived as Roman citizens in GREECE surrounded by Greeks, Macedonians, Jews, etc.
  2. The analogy Paul uses here is of the Believer in the Royal Family of God living in the world of Satan.
  3. Rome was just as much ROME in Philippi as it was in the city of the 7 hills which was Rome.

4. Thus the Royal Family of God living in the world of Satan is just as much in the aristocracy of the Royal Family of God as anyone else who is in heaven.
- E. The aristocracy of the Royal Family of God will always exist in the temporal and eternal state for all believers.
  1. The believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and Ultra Super Grace always eagerly wait or anticipate being face to face with the Lord.
  2. However, Ultimate Sanctification belongs also to every believer without regard to spiritual Status Quo in time.

#### IV. Ultimate Sanctification:

- A. All believers in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ in time will at the end of life and transfer to heaven at the time of the rapture of the church receive a Resurrection Body minus the Old Sin Nature and minus Human Good without regard to their level of spiritual advance in time.
- B. The body of all believers are in a HUMBLE STATION in this life on earth and when a person reaches Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and receives his package of Super Grace blessings he realizes how wonderful life can be on this earth.
  1. How we can have capacity for life, love and happiness linked with promotion and success and being part of historical impact and blessing by association.
  2. Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ will at the rapture of the church TRANSFORM the body of our humble station of existence into conformity with the body of his glory his Resurrection Body.
  3. There is on the part of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ a deliberate objective on the part of ALL members of the Royal Family of God to transform their bodies to Resurrection Bodies and bring all things under his authority.
- C. In life there are a multitude of levels of authority with which we interact on a daily basis.
  1. In addition even though God cannot bring you directly under his authority now as a believer there will be a time when we possess a Resurrection Body when the situation will change and ALL believers whether in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God or reversionism will be under his direct authority.
  2. In the Angelic Conflict VOLITION is required to resolve the Angelic Conflict and each individual person MUST be free to accept or reject Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God and subsequently Bible Doctrine.
  3. The believer must be free to accept or reject Bible Doctrine as the grace Plan of God.
  4. God will bring all creatures including both Angelic and Human creatures under his authority even though today they have free will.
  5. All fallen angels and humans who reject Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ will be in the Lake of Fire and not be able to leave the Lake of Fire and will be under the direct authority of God.
  6. Eternity is the END of the Angelic Conflict and all things will be brought under the authority of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
    - i. The unbeliever does not fit into the authority structure of eternal heaven therefore he will reside in the Lake of Fire which brings him under terminal authority.
  7. The reversionistic believer, however, will receive a Resurrection Body and be under the direct authority of God as a result.
  8. The most wonderful thing is to realize that there will be believers in heaven who will be decorated some HIGHLY and some lightly and some without any decorations.
    - i. Cities for the Old Testament Scripture believers
    - ii. Wreaths of Glory for the New Testament Scripture believers
      - a. There are actually many levels of decoration of which the Cities and Wreaths are the highest levels.
      - b. All believers will receive a decoration for their level of advance in the Spiritual Life in time.

9. These decorations glorify God for ever and give special blessings and rewards for these believers for all eternity.

**Phil 3:19**

v19: (The reversionists as enemies of the cross), Whose termination, cessation or conclusion of this life keeps on being or is ruin, the destruction which one experiences from administration of the Sin unto death discipline, whose god is his emotion in Emotional Revolt of the Soul and emotional arrogance, who have a way of life which is to glory in their shame or dishonor, or whose fame comes by cheating, lack of integrity and dishonor from involvement in the Cosmic Dynasphere #2, who keep on thinking and form and hold opinions about human viewpoint or earthly things being under the influence of evil from Satan's policy and plan.

**Phil 3:20**

v20: For (the state or commonwealth or body politic, uniting in common interest, the profit percentage) the Sphere of our citizenship or our aristocracy, keeps on existing forever in heaven, even from which place, the palace in heaven, we eagerly wait and anticipate the savior, Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ at the permanent transfer of the Royal Family of God in the Rapture.

**Phil 3:21**

v21: who shall change or transform the form of the body of our humble station, contamination or humility (Old Sin Nature in our Human Body), into conformity with the Resurrection Body of his glory according to the operational power from which the same one, Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ, keeps on being able to bring into subjection all things to himself (Angelic and Human)

**Lesson #81**

**Series # 469**

**2Tim 3:13**

- I. Freedom through Military Victory
- A. All our freedom is purchased on battlefields and NO POLITICIAN has ever contributed to that freedom.
  - B. Our freedom comes through the Laws of Divine Establishment meaning that many military organizations have fought in many parts of this world and paid the price which often goes with military victory in loss of life for our continued freedom.
    1. These have given of themselves under the principle of discipline in order that we might have the opportunity and FREEDOM to pursue our desired course of activity in life without regard to whether it is good or bad so long as it is not lawless.
    2. {(ff) Although I lived through this time, I was very busy focusing on a professional education and was not concerned at that time with historical trends and did not appreciate what occurred at this time.}
  - C. This year was used for the greatest propaganda campaign for everything false, anti freedom and anti establishment with churches emphasizing one worldism, glorification of the United nations and brotherly love in the world, more backing down to our enemies the Chinese and Russians who are out to destroy us.
    1. These had moved at that time into our hemisphere and violated the Monroe Doctrine and Manifest Destiny the two great doctrines we have lost under liberalism.
    2. In the Unites States of America since long before this time of 1976 we have been on the wrong side of Human History and everything with regard to the Laws of Divine Establishment has been gone.
    3. Since before this time parents do not teach discipline and respect for authority in the home.
    4. Children run loose without any semblance of a dress code as if they knew what they were doing.
    5. We developed the HIPPIE concept of life and the worst culture that this country had ever seen {until NOW}
    6. We developed young people who focus their efforts on stimulation through chemical means and this is a prime indication that there is NO capacity for life and they cannot find stimulation in other areas.

7. This was a GREAT period of GREAT tragedy and the greatest tragedy is what politicians have done to the military and they have corrupted it and destroyed it setting up peer rating systems which are unbelievable and worse today.
8. They rely on psychological concepts which do not determine anyone's capabilities in the area of the military and it is FAR worse today.
9. Instead of money for the military being used to develop and deploy advanced weapons and trained men it is and has been for a very long time used for ADVERTISING for recruiting instead of a DRAFT system being in place.
10. Every American Male should be anxious to get into military service in order to grow up a bit.
11. Considering the Status Quo of the United States of America today in 2019 our situation is SO vastly more tragic than it has been in all of our history that it is almost incomprehensibly depressing (thank God for doctrine) and in every area of our society which we look we see the degeneracy and destruction wrought by liberal socialism and anti establishment. {obviously this is my opinion ff}

D. Then in 76 and now in 2019 we must at all costs AVOID reacting to this trend of history and the potential destruction of the United States of America as we know it for if we do as some in 76 had done we will leap head first into reversionism and destroy any semblance of a Spiritual Life.

1. The media including EVERY system of communication available we constantly hear people glorified who have nothing to offer our nation but who are earnestly listened to by a vast number in the population.
2. These are totally anti American and despite some of them having had great pseudo prosperity under the system in this nation they do not in any way understand the system that we should be functioning under.
3. In 76 we saw as before in the 60s RACE as an issue brought into focus and today in 2019 we see RACE as the greatest issue ever in our history and under our system of constitutional government RACE IS NEVER AN ISSUE.
4. We have seen this issue become a greater and greater one because our children have been less and less trained and educated in their capacities for Americanism than ever before in our history and in its place we have now today training for one worldism in our public schools.
5. This is one of the MOST awful periods of American history ever and if it were not for the development of a pivot of mature believers in the 70s, 80s and on we would not even exist today.
6. Our enemies in the world who have been developing plans for our destruction and take over for many many decades are at it again and they have plans for peaceful or military means or both.
7. We have LOST track of our heritage and cower in fear before enemies in the world who don't even have to threaten us just profess a bad opinion about us.

E. Everywhere all the propaganda since the time of the Bicentennial has been designed, more so today than ever, to bring the believer away from the TRUE meaning of our nation.

## II. Doctrine of Historical Interpretation:

- A. One of the greatest illustrations of a failure to interpret history has been the Russian Revolution of 1917
  1. Lenin and Trotsky estimated that the proletariat of Europe would back them in their revolution.
  2. Lenin was always concerned about the backward Asiatic character of the Russian people.
  3. He could not see how socialism could be achieved by Russia alone and gambled that it would not stop at the Russian borders.
  4. He thought that advanced Europe would help Russia with machines technical advice, administrative experience and education



5. **HE WAS WRONG!**
  6. It was not Europe but the United States of America in its weakness who did this starting with Franklin Roosevelt and were it not for him the revolution would never had lasted beyond 1942 when he having convinced the British to join him then armed the Russian people.
  7. It is because of Roosevelt in dealing with Stalin that we have seen at least  $\frac{1}{3}$  of the people of the earth go into slavery to communism and ourselves with our backs to the wall against Russia and China communism.
- B. WE have lost everything we had gained in the victory of the army of 11 million who fought in World War II
1. We are in the worst shape ever in our history
  2. We have not been able to interpret contemporary history since Roosevelt and since then have really not understood what was going on.
  3. Russian had the political initiative in the revolution of 1917 but SOCIALISM could not carry it so in 1919 the Bolshevik party set up the Communist Internationale and this is when they got rid of the mensheviks and showed their true motivations.
  4. Revolution is always evil and never right and the bible is anti revolution to the core.
  5. In 1776 in the war between the United States and Britain this was not a REVOLUTION but a WAR FOR INDEPENDENCE.
  6. In 1921 at the end of the revolution in Russia it became obvious to Lenin that the middle class parliamentary regimes of western Europe had resisted the propaganda of communism (they were much smarter than the same people and those in the United States of America today) and the soviet union stood alone.
  7. They were the progeny of devastation and poverty and the people in Russia were starving by the millions and if it had not been for Herbert Hoover head of a commission to help the Russians they would all have starved to death.
  8. Russia Stood alone and almost collapsed and had to go back to capitalism to sustain them because THEY could not properly interpret history either.
  9. In 1924 Stalin had to declare the doctrine of socialism for 1 country and admitted at that time that the Russian revolution with their objectives in mind had been a total failure and therefore there was no genius administrator like Napoleon or Caesar to pull them out of the fire.
  10. In October 1920 anyone who had a half a brain could interpret what was happening with the Russians and Zinevev gave the whole thing away at the congress of German independent socialists at Hall
    - i. **TAKE NOTE HERE: "It was never anticipated that we would have to resort to so much terror in the civil war. Our hands have become blood stained".**
    - ii. He admitted that violence did not solve it but that they had to resort to violence but this was only a prelude to the total destruction of Russian freedom.
  11. At the end of the civil war in 1921 the workers and peasants had been deprived of all political freedoms and the foundations had been laid for the single party system which has since existed and the violence which started the revolution was perpetuated and has never stopped and became so bad that friend could not be distinguished from foe and there came into being a GHASTLY TYRANNY.
  12. All of this is a result of failure to interpret history.
- C. We have had missionaries who went to china and they also failed to interpret history and with just a little Bible Doctrine they should have been able to do so.
1. These people would go out and preach the gospel of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ but that was all they knew and when the Chinese communists would come to town they would observe what was going on and the Whore Houses and Opium Dens would be closed and Gambling would be cut out and the towns cleaned up from criminality and then the

missionaries would get on the radio and urge the people to cooperate with the communists.

2. These missionaries were the WORST and MOST NAIVE idiots in the world at that time and failed to see what communism really is.
3. Communism is a manifestation of the genius of Satan and totally destructive to human freedom (that which is essential for resolution of the Angelic Conflict).
4. We are in the same Status Quo today since the 60s and 70s.
5. Our attitudes toward crime and criminals and their “rights” and trying to get ride of guns in the hands of lawful citizens are so idiotic that it is actually amazing to think about.
6. There are very few people who ever come close to the proper interpretation of contemporary history and they are very few and far between.

D. Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ controls Human History:

1. He does so in 3 ways:
  - i. Direct control through his essence
  - ii. Indirect control through the Laws of Divine Establishment
    - a. This is where the military and Law Enforcement comes into the picture
    - b. This is where any soldier in the military who is a believer should be the best professional objective killer in his unit.
  - iii. Permissive Control permitting human volition functioning in this phase of the Angelic Conflict.
2. This is the whole concept of freedom and the Laws of Divine Establishment created to protect freedom.

E. The bible is the key to HISTORICAL INTERPRETATION:

1. Historical interpretation MUST be related to GOD, the UNSEEN WORLD of the Angelic Conflict as well as the visible world of mankind.
  - i. Bible Doctrine is the basis of the correct interpretation of Human History.
  - ii. People generally forget the fact that no matter how great a group or nation may be EVERYONE has an Old Sin Nature and people spoil quickly.
  - iii. To see history objectively one must possess the Divine Viewpoint of life and one of the byproducts of reaching Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace is the capability to assemble that which is false and that which is true and make a correct estimate of the historical situation of the current moment in history.
2. True history is a series of facts about the Human Race and to correlate and interpret these fact requires Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and therefore the daily function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception.
  - i. This limits the perspicacity with regard to history of the unbeliever and in addition gives to us a great advantage in this field.
  - ii. We, as believers, are able to understand the principles on which the Laws of Divine Establishment are built and the Bible Doctrine behind them as well.
  - iii. To correctly interpret history you MUST understand the Angelic Conflict, the First Advent, the Cross, the 2<sup>nd</sup> advent of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
  - iv. To correlate history with what is occurring today we must understand what has happened before and these are contained in the principles and fact of the bible.
3. Many historians have recognized that Rome is the Key and Pivot of all of Human History we understand this from the bible because Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ in Hypostatic Union in the 1<sup>st</sup> advent came in the period of the Roman Empire SPQR.
  - i. All streams of Ancient Human History flow into the Roman Empire and all the streams of modern history flow out.

- ii. Rome was the empire which protected the beginning of the Church Age and provided the Laws of Divine Establishment by which the church grew and was the empire which existed in the “fullness of time”.
  - iii. You can find how Rome reached its greatness and how it faded out in the scripture and therefore see every principle of modern history right there and that all modern history proceeded from Rome.
  - iv. However, while Rome is the center of Human History and this is confirmed by Bible Doctrine it has never been properly related to modern history nor set up in retrospection with ancient history and as a result the chance to interpret contemporary history is LOST.
4. The student of history focused on the Laws of Divine Establishment as an unbeliever can understand that while the Greeks made Political and Intellectual contributions to history their contributions were destroyed by their reversionism.
- i. Alexander was one of the greatest intellects ever to live but it took him in the wrong direction with internationalism and brotherly love and the year he tried to start one of the first united nations in history was the year he died.
  - ii. The Romans became great and vigorous through discipline and recognition of authority and through the principles of capacity for life related to these concepts rather than the intellectual concepts.
  - iii. Rome was on it’s way down when Rome absorbed GREEK culture and ideas and the Greeks had genius but the Romans had respect for authority.
  - iv. The Greeks had moments of greatness but ROME was great for nearly 1000 years.
  - v. Respect for authority and understanding of the Laws of Divine Establishment as over against the genius of Human Viewpoint thinking demonstrate the success and greatness of Rome.
5. Conservatives have always had something to say in history and as today have often found themselves outnumbered in history.
- i. They have always been land owners in the field of aristocracy or land farming peasantry.
  - ii. In ancient history there were always 2 kinds of conservatives these peasants who worked the land and the aristocrats who owned the land and ROME only had in its beginning these 2 kinds.
  - iii. Therefore everyone in Rome at one time was conservative in their rise to power.
6. Liberals never have been and never are truly honest and talk about the greatest good for the greatest number but what they really mean is “I would like to use this as a front for grabbing power”.
- i. Liberalism is a power grab and the propaganda from the source of it is ALWAYS someone or some group trying to grab power without regard for what is best.
  - ii. Someone with approbation lust or power lust trying to be recognized and why liberals are outdoing each other in squandering public funds for welfare and socialism instead of military and all the things which are destroying free enterprise.
7. Proper historical interpretation can save many lives but we don’t see much of this today.
- F. The principles of interpretation of history are many and incredibly varied and you can review them.
- 1. Occasionally there is some truth in some of them but they all MISS the great truth that HISTORY IS Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and He controls history and starting at that point you can see the real issues in life.
  - 2. All of the many areas of historical interpretation pick up some truth and in fact do reflect the genius of Satan as ruler of this world in propagandizing the Human Race.

- G. The Bible often sheds Light on even Obscure historical events.
    - 1. Judges 3:31 which discusses the great movements of the 12<sup>th</sup> century BC and how the whole world was upset and WHY.
  - H. Each generation of Human History is sustained by believers in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace 2Tim 1:5-6
  - I. The Principle of Being on the wrong side of history:
    - 1. Three concepts regarding the Wrong side of History 2Tim 3
      - i. Description of the wrong side of history v1-4
      - ii. Opposition from the wrong side of history v5-12
      - iii. Deliverance from the Wrong side of history v13-
- III. Deliverance from the Wrong Side of History:
- A. Principle with regard to the Evangelists of Evil, the Apostles of Apostasy, Those who confuse truth by obscuring the correct interpretation of history with Satanic Propaganda:
    - 1. Every generation will possess its apostles and evangelists of evil.
    - 2. Consequently eradication by violence is NOT the solution.
      - i. Any time something historically is solved by violence in Revolution or assassination it solves NOTHING.
      - ii. Once you destroy people and try to get rid of their concepts Satan has a way of bringing double the concepts worse than the one you got rid of.
      - iii. See the French Revolution, Russian Revolution.
      - iv. Violence is Authorized in the fighting of a military team fighting for the FREEDOM of a nation of Law Enforcement in its job of protecting the freedom, privacy and property of the citizens.
      - v. There was at this time some ideas of the police not using “dum dum” bullets because of the “pain” it caused the criminal.
      - vi. The concept is that a criminal is a criminal and it does not matter what you shoot him with as long as you shoot him accurately and wipe him out.
      - vii. Obviously police should use whatever ammunition will stop a criminal quickest and both military and Law Enforcement personnel have a rough time because of this type of Vicious Liberal Propaganda.
      - viii. Both of these are Legitimate use of violence and they both should be trained well to shoot well and kill objectively and professionally.
      - ix. No police nor private citizen who protects his life, property and freedom legitimately should ever be up for CIVIL suits because of wounding or killing a criminal.
    - 3. When you use violence to destroy someone who is wrong like Kennedy and he was not very great but the people who shot him were even more Wrong than he.
      - i. You cannot solve problems by violence and assassination.
      - ii. To find these people wrong and traitorous and then tried, convicted and executed would be fine but to take the law into one’s own hands and assassinate someone who is liberal or confused is totally wrong.
      - iii. The principle is that if you destroy one of these then 2 take their place and the apostles and evangelists of evil are like the Hydra of Hercules
      - iv. Violence must be under a strict system of discipline like the military and should in representing a national entity under the Laws of Divine Establishment.
      - v. In the Vietnam war we were so screwed up we had politicians dictating what we could kill the natives with and how we should be fighting the war.
      - vi. It got so bad the Marine Corps was caught without artillery and support was not available and the infantry in every service took a great beating because of the imposed limitations.

- vii. It never occurred to anyone to Go up and simply WIPE OUT NORTH VIETNAM and we should have used our old obsolete Atomic Weapons and dumped them onto the NVA instead of into the ocean.
  - viii. Our failure in Vietnam was not due to the military failure but due to our idiotic liberal ideas from our liberal politicians and one Kennedy brother suggested that we send BLOOD PLASMA to our enemies??????
  - ix. It is our history that when violence should be and ought to be used the United States of America backs off and what we should have done was to make an impression on the communists and we had 2 chances, 1 in Korea and 1 in Vietnam and we failed in both.
  - x. Violence never solves anything EXCEPT in a military encounter when it should be done objectively and professionally.
  - xi. The solution of the problems of Human Good is not found in the destruction of those on the wrong side of Human History, violence is NOT the answer.
  - xii. We would not permit our military in Vietnam to use proper violence under conditions when All kinds of violence could have and should have been used.
  - xiii. Violence in the hands of law and the military is a legitimate function but Liberals are always against that kind of violence.
  - xiv. Now we have Citizens Committees overseeing the function of the Law Enforcement Officers in their application of violence.
  - xv. Today in prison the criminal can generally out psych the psychologists and convince them that they are not rehabilitated so they can return to society and commit more crime.
  - xvi. In addition prison inmates have courses of education to teach returning criminals how to do their jobs better and more effectively.
  - xvii. This is failure to understand ONE simple principle of history THE PROPER VS THE IMPROPER USE OF VIOLENCE.
  - xviii. Bullies individual or national will continue to bully as long as no one stands up to them with properly applied violence.
  - xix. This is why castros and jungle leaders of Africa and middle eastern moslems can sneer at Americans and burn our flag because he have allowed them to bully us and push us around because of our idiotic liberal system of Brotherly Love
  - xx. We have freedom today because a lot of people have been KILLED on battlefields and in the streets as a result of curbing crime.
  - xxi. Interpretation of history is distorted so that from legitimate violence of the Law Enforcement officer protecting property, privacy, life and freedom to the military men fighting battles to establish and preserve freedom it is turned around so that all kinds of lawless people are allowed to be on the loose and use violence of many kinds.
  - xxii. See our gangs and criminal organizations in this country and the influx and infiltration of “illegal aliens” into this nation who neither know nor care about our laws.
  - xxiii. This is failure to interpret history properly.
  - xxiv. Every time an apostle or evangelist of evil is killed 2 will replace him so that evil as the policy of Satan will be perpetuated throughout history as part of the Angelic Conflict.
4. Apostles of evil will continue in Human History and their persecution of the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace will continue unabated in every generation.

- i. The answer to this persecution and pressure from evil and reversionism is not found in resorting to violence such as revolution and assassination where 2 wrongs do not make a right, but in the paragraph we will be studying.
- ii. Metabolized Bible Doctrine transforms those who are on the side of Satan and would use violence as their solution and destroy your freedoms.

IV. Being on the Wrong side of History:

- A. One of the greatest struggles in history is between those who are under the influence of evil and those in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace.
  - 1. Review the principles of Evil
    - i. Brotherly Love
    - ii. Human good
    - iii. Anti Laws of Divine Establishment
  - 2. The apostles of evil are impostors and are always passing themselves off for something they in fact are not.
    - i. They always talk about good deeds, environmental problems, greatest good for the greatest number, the downtrodden, wanting a handout for some idiotic cause, full of sweetness and brotherly love and one worldism ETC.
    - ii. This is a FALSE character, or FACADE
- B. There are 2 things which can stop evil:
  - 1. Evil as Violence and is stopped by
    - i. Spiritual factor of Bible Doctrine
      - a. The Gospel of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ converting by Faith alone in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ alone.
      - b. Metabolized Bible Doctrine causing spiritual growth to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and beyond.
    - ii. The Laws of Divine Establishment.
      - a. This is why one of the noblest of all professions is the military since under the Laws of Divine Establishment all human freedom comes from military victory.
- C. When men become involved in reversionism under the influence of evil what is to be expected is that they will mislead and deceive others.
  - 1. This is the 6<sup>th</sup> stage of reversionism Blackout of the Soul where reversionists have rejected truth especially Bible Doctrine and opened the vacuum of the soul to the lie and evil.
  - 2. All reversionists have been deceived by Satan to the EXTENT that they are influenced by the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil.
  - 3. Satan started by deceiving the Woman in the garden and the subsequent fall of man led to the Satanic Coup DE Tat by which he became rule of the world which ADDED power to his deceit in the Human Race.
  - 4. Now Satan has power and deceit going for him.

2Tim 3:13

v13: **But evil men even impostors, swindlers or deceivers will cut their way forward in future generations going on in what is more and more evil, even though deceiving others they are also being deceived by Satan himself.**

**Lesson #82      Series # 469      2Tim 3:14**

- I. Doctrine of Satanic Strategy:
  - A. You cannot understand the strategy and tactics of Satan without an understanding of the person of Satan.
    - 1. In our time this is relegated to fairy tails or mythology yet it is this very person who is responsible for the very existence of Human History.

2. For in all of his genius in antagonism and revolution against God the Angelic Conflict has shifted gears and gone into its final phase the History of Man.
  3. Man was created in the first place to resolve the Angelic Conflict.
- B. The Person of Satan the one behind the strategy and tactics as ruler of this world.
1. He is highest of all angelic creatures and was created the superior angel of all angels **Matt 8:28, 9:34, 12:26, Luke 11:18-19, ETC**
  2. He is superior in intellect and personality and in every way.
  3. Satan is not the red skinned horned creature with a pitch fork and green eyes and if he could be personified in human form he would be breathtaking in his beauty and personality and EVIL genius.
  4. He is a prehistoric super creature **Is 14:12-17, Ez 28:11-19** and existed before mankind and for how long it is not known.
  5. He is superior all creatures especially to any human creature who has ever existed with the exception of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ who is seated at the right hand of God the Father in heaven at this time.
  6. He has 3 falls
    - i. 2 in the past and 1 in the future. **Is 1;4, Ez 28, Rev 12+20**
  7. He has 2 advents
    - i. The 1<sup>st</sup> Advent found man in the perfect environment of the garden and he destroyed that by appealing to the arrogance and free will of the woman who in turn worked on the man resulting in the fall of mankind. **Gen 3**
    - ii. His 2<sup>nd</sup> Advent when he returns to lead the Gog revolution. **Rev 20**
  8. He is the central antagonist of the Angelic Conflict, **Heb 1+2, 1Pet 3:18-22, Gen 6**
  9. He has a vast incredible organization and part of his TOE is found in Eph 6:10-12
  10. He is a murderer from the beginning John 8:44
  11. He is the opponent of Bible Doctrine Matt 13:9+39
  12. He is the enemy of the Royal Family of God **Rev 2:9, 13, 24**
  13. With this information we understand that we are facing a superior creature:
    - i. His genius is far greater than human genius
    - ii. His power far exceeds any human power.
    - iii. His abilities are phenomenal and he has in fact had a great deal to do with the running of this nation for sure since World War II and long before.
- C. The Rulership of Satan and His Power:
1. He is far greater and stronger and has far greater power than any human system and is ruler of this world since the fall of Adam. **Luke 4:5-7, John 12:31, 14:30, 16:11, 2Cor 4:4, Eph 2:2**
    - i. As ruler of this world his power vastly exceeds any power we have.
    - ii. We derive our strength and ability to resist Satan from those powers provided directly from God.
    - iii. The omnipotence of God and the power which God has vested in Bible Doctrine.
- D. The Strategy of Satan regarding the nations of the world:
1. He has a policy, strategy and plan to manipulate nations through his genius, **Rev 12:9, 20:3, 8**
  2. Therefore Satan is the chief opponent of the Laws of Divine Establishment and seeks to break down the sovereignty and freedom of nationalism and in this way control nations.
    - i. Any system of internationalism is a satanic system and one whereby Satan is seeking control the nations of the world.
    - ii. The United Nations, Communism, Political Internationalism, Romanism, The World Counsel of churches, Islam, or any other system of internationalism which is ALWAYS anti- Bible Doctrine, God, Christian, Laws of Divine Establishment and PRO Satan.

- E. The strategy of Satan for the unbelievers:
1. Since all unbelievers are under Satan's direct command and power his strategy for them runs from blinding the minds of the unbeliever so that they will not respond to the gospel and therefore not be converted to Christianity, to every form of unbeliever reversionism whereby Satan seeks to put his policy of evil into operation. **2Pet 2, 2Cor 4:3-4, Luke 8:12,**
  2. He uses religion to blind the minds of the unbeliever to the gospel, the claims of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ on the soul. **Rev 17**
  3. He uses various Christian gimmicks like the system of the holy rollers 2Thes 2:7-10, Col 2:8,
  4. Therefore it is easy to see that religion is the devil's Ace Trump Card with regard to his strategy against the gospel.
- F. The strategy of Satan with regard to the Believer in the Royal Family of God: **2Cor 2:11**
1. It has 7 parts:
    - i. He tries to get believers under his control and in his hypocrisy then goes to heaven and accuses them of being under his control.
      - a. He is the accuser of the believer and is in fact what "devil" actually means, one who as a liar seeks to bring false information. **Job 1:6-11,**
      - b. He keeps a ongoing file on all believers and periodically goes to heaven and accuses them before God. **Zech 3:1-2, Rev 1:9-10**
      - c. We are however represented by Counsel or a Defense Attorney in Heaven, He is our public Defender automatically assigned to us at the point of our Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God, 1John 2:1-2.
      - d. This is one of the functions of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ at the right hand of God the Father to act as our defense attorney.
      - e. When Satan brings up sin Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ simply refers to his having died a Substitutionary Spiritual Death for all sin and God the Father dismisses the case.
        - i) However while the case is dismissed there still may be some Divine Discipline remaining for the failure to remain in the Plan of God.
      - f. If the case brought up is reversionism the matter is far more complicated but we do have a perfect representation at the right hand of God the Father in the Supreme Court of Heaven.
    - ii. Sponsoring reversionism: **1Cor 10:19-21, 2Cor 11:3, 13-15**
      - a. It is an objective of Satan to get believers into reversionism in order that he might control them.
      - b. The unbeliever can be demon possessed but the believer cannot be demon possessed but he CAN be completely under the dominance of Satan through the doctrines of demons which have infiltrated the soul.
        - i) This is why we have believers in government and in bureaucratic seats who actually constantly are bringing legislature to the floor of congress and senate which is totally EVIL in every aspect.
    - iii. Frustrate all 3 categories of the Will of God in the life of the believer:
      - a. Mental which is what you should be thinking ie. Bible Doctrine **Eph 4;14**
        - i)
      - b. Geographic which is where God wants you to be **1Thes 2:18**
      - c. Operational which is what you should be doing **James 4:7-8**
    - iv. Neutralize Bible Doctrine application:
      - a. All Mental Attitude Sins
      - b. Worry, Anxiety, Fear, Reaction to Historical Disaster,



- i ) If you react to historical disaster you will enter reversionism and lose out totally in the Angelic Conflict.
      - ii ) This nation has not been truly tested by disaster for a very long time but it is coming and today is very close.
    - c. The only protection against disaster and insulation against reversionism and the satanic policies of evil is Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
    - d. To get on the wrong side of Human History is the worst thing which can happen to you as a believer and it can occur if you are not consistent in function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception.
    - e. To neutralize Bible Doctrine application Satan brings about many things which cause the believer worry, fear, anxiety, panic regarding security  
**1Pet 5:7-9**
  - v. Destroy the focus of the believer in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ:
    - a. The believer in the Royal Family of God must be under Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and this cannot happen if his focus is deviated from consistent Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine and advance to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace.
    - b. Satan has ways to cause you to get your eyes on
      - i ) People **Jer 17:5**
      - ii ) Self **1Kins 19:10**
      - iii ) Things **Heb 13:5-6**
    - c. These things are designed to keep you from Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ or focus on advance in the Spiritual Life.
    - d. The believer who is yet advancing to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God cannot be under Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ but can LOOK unto Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ the author and finisher of our faith retaining his FOCUS on Christ through consistent Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine.
  - vi. Involvement in Improving the world of Satan, SOCIAL ACTION
    - a. The reversionist believer becomes anthropocentric, humanistic, under occupation with man's problems, trying to improve or advocating systems of the greatest good for the greatest number, systems to improve the environment of man,
      - i ) Environmentalists are the most evil of people who have almost destroyed all of the prosperity of his nation and will do so eventually since they are using the environment as an attack on free enterprise and big business which is the basis for all of our prosperity.
    - b. Socialism, social action, social gospel.
  - vii. Incultation of Fear with regard to Physical Death: **Heb 2;14-15**
    - a. Many religions and idolatry systems have functions designed to handle the FEAR of death.
- G. Religion is part of the strategy of Satan:
  - 1. It is the creation of the genius of Satan to counterfeit the Plan of God.
    - i. It is not the same as Christianity where by man is the beneficiary of the work of God
    - ii. In religion man is trying to use his own work to gain approbation of God.
    - iii. These are antithetical

2. At Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God the believer enters the Royal Family of God through the Baptism of God the Holy Spirit ministry placing us into union with Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and regeneration.
  - i. Religion says that man hooks up with God through his work, effort, merit, thinking, planning and systems.
3. Religion represents the evil genius of Satan but must be viewed as a counterfeit for the Plan of God in at least 9 areas:
  - i. Gospel 2Cor 4:3-4
  - ii. Ministers 2Cor 11:13-15
  - iii. Doctrine 2Tim 4:1
  - iv. Communion Table 1Cor 10:19-21
  - v. Spirituality Gal 3:2-3
  - vi. Righteousness Matt 19:16-28
  - vii. Modus Vivendi Matt 23:13-36
  - viii. Power and dynamics 2Thes 2:7-10
  - ix. Gods 2Thes 2:3-4

H. False teachers are part of his strategy

1. He could get nowhere without them and they often have a phony and hypocritical facade and are bleed heart liberals, sweetness and love everyone, international friendship loving the communists and moslems, and always have a facade which impresses the idiot. Matt 7:15, Rom 16:18
2. They use human public relations and legalistic flirtations to court believers Gal 4:17-18, 2Tim 3:5-7
3. They appeal to human ego and pride 2Cor 10:12
4. They promote idolatry as part of the devil's communion table Hab 2:18-19
5. They promote legalism and Self Righteousness 1Tim 1:7-8
6. They will continue throughout the Angelic Conflict especially in the Church Age 1John 4:1

I. Satan therefore has a specific policy known as EVIL.

1. Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil
2. Doctrine of Evil
3. Application of Evil in Human Good.

J. Principle:

1. All reversionists have been deceived by Satan to the extent they are influenced by the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil the first declaration of the genius plan and policy of Satan.
2. He started by deceiving the woman in the garden when Man was ruler of the world but he engaged in a Coup DE Tat which occurred at the fall of Adam and by this he became the ruler of this world under this phenomenal policy of EVIL.

II. Deliverance from Evil and Deceit comes through the daily function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception:

A. Review the details of function of the Grace Apparatus for Perception and the importance of Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine as Epignosis.

B. As a part of the Royal Family of God you have started with Bible Doctrine so you are told here to remain with Bible Doctrine.

1. You as a member of the Royal Family of God a believer in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ you:
  - i. **CANNOT READ BOOKS**
  - ii. **CANNOT AVOID ACADEMIC DISCIPLINE FOR THE INTAKE OF BIBLE DOCTRINE**
  - iii. **CANNOT GET IT ON YOUR OWN UNLESS YOU ARE A PASTOR.**

2. Between the Bible Doctrine on the page of scripture is a LINK which is the Pastor Teacher
    - i. The communication of Bible Doctrine to the believer must occur under a system of strict academic discipline which is part of the spiritual growth along with the assimilation of the Bible Doctrine.
  3. We are to endure, to remain, to continue with the intake of Bible Doctrine no matter what our situation or Status Quo in life is.
    - i. In human life there are time of sensitivity and it is inevitable that in the teaching presentation of Bible Doctrine that a sensitive area will be breached.
    - ii. When this occurs you simply relax and remain objective through it for it is ESSENTIAL that you remain under Bible Doctrine.
    - iii. And whether through face to face teaching or through some recorded system you can only get Bible Doctrine taught under a system of discipline by your right Pastor Teacher.
    - iv. Everyone is tempted from time to time to break from Bible Doctrine and you may break off because of something taught or some irritating person in the congregation of some irritation with the person of the Pastor Teacher or some situation of your life.
    - v. No matter how much Bible Doctrine slams you or how many detractors or distractions come into your life it is IMPERATIVE that you stick with Bible Doctrine constantly and consistently.
    - vi. By remaining consistent in the Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine this believer under Positive Volition is delivered from EVIL.
- C. Every believer must advance in the Spiritual Life and avoid Evil.
1. The means of doing this is by the constant consistent Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine under the Filling of God the Holy Spirit and Grace Apparatus for Perception.
  2. This is the means of spiritual growth and also reversion recovery to reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace.
  3. To advance in the Spiritual Life you must learn Bible Doctrine from your own right Pastor Teacher.
  4. The teaching ministry of the Pastor Teacher along with the ministry of God the Holy Spirit who teaches doctrine in your soul **John 16:12-16, 1Cor 2:9-14, 1John 2:27**
    - i. You learn what is taught by your right Pastor Teacher FROM God the Holy Spirit
    - ii. God the Holy Spirit does not teach the believer apart from the academic discipline of the local church.
    - iii. God has appointed human communicators to teach those in any given congregation both being under Filling of God the Holy Spirit.
    - iv. God the Holy Spirit does not teach you ANYTHING directly thus avoiding arrogance in the life of the believer.
    - v. It is the ministry of God the Holy Spirit along with the ministry of the Pastor Teacher which provides the Bible Doctrine we must inculcate.
  5. Disciple as a matter of fact means a STUDENT under strict academic discipline to learn what is being communicating
- D. All believers move from Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God through all stages of the Spiritual Life UNDER STRICT ACADEMIC DISCIPLINE.
1. To move from Super Grace to Ultra Super Grace this must continue.

2. And once having reached Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace or having gone on to Ultra Super Grace when life is over the happiest moment occurs when we can go on to dying grace blessings.
3. From Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God to dying grace life should include one great blessing after another and this is only accomplished by consistency in the function of the believer under the Filling of God the Holy Spirit and the Grace Apparatus for Perception.

E. Principle:

1. We must return to the relative pronoun (gr) 'hos' the object of the preposition (gr) 'en' an idiom from Homeric Greek times.
  - i. This idiomatic phrase brings us the "THOSE" which began in the Sanskrit (ss) of the Indoeuropean invaders of India
  - ii. They had a pronoun (ss) 'yas' which was the original demonstrative pronoun in any Indoeuropean language and it eventually came down to the Greek which was one of the indoeuropean languages.
  - iii. (ss) 'Yas' is very close to (gr) 'hos' in philology.
  - iv. The purpose of a demonstrative pronoun is to emphasize something in the passage emphasized before but to give it an IDIOMATIC emphasis which it did not have before to remind you of something which you should be reminded of every day of your life, the importance of Bible Doctrine.
2. The importance of Bible Doctrine in your life is such that Metabolized Bible Doctrine is the only means of spiritual growth.
  - i. You cannot grow in the Spiritual Life by your efforts or works
  - ii. You cannot advance spiritually nor gain Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God by your efforts or works.
  - iii. There is NOTHING which you can do for God for salvation nor spiritual growth.
  - iv. Therefore Bible Doctrine must be transferred to your soul before you can grow.
  - v. Bible Doctrine must be transferred to the Human Spirit by God the Holy Spirit which bears witness with our Human Spirit to teach us Bible Doctrine.
  - vi. Therefore the importance of Bible Doctrine is the first issue and its transfer from the pages of scripture where it is preserved for every generation by God himself to the souls of the individual believer
3. There can be NO transfer without the ministry of God the Holy Spirit.
  - i. The Pastor Teacher cannot learn Bible Doctrine in his study apart from the Filling of God the Holy Spirit.
  - ii. The congregation which assembles around the Pastor Teacher, either fact to face or before some recorded medium, cannot learn Bible Doctrine without the Filling of God the Holy Spirit
4. NO ONE ever succeeds in anything in life whether in the human or spiritual realm WITHOUT DISCIPLINE.
  - i. This is the failing of fundamentalist Christians and holy rollers where they think they are a law to themselves and without discipline.
  - ii. There must first be self discipline related to assembling to hear Bible Doctrine.
  - iii. Then there must be academic discipline under which one must properly function to hear and learn Bible Doctrine.
    - a. Both depend on the recognition of the authority of the Pastor Teacher.
    - b. We as believers in a congregation are not a law to ourselves and do not grow spiritually by reading books or searching the bible individually or from nice people but all spiritual growth is from DISCIPLINE.

- iv. Since before the 70s we were and have continued to be a nation who knows nothing of discipline where children were not raised with discipline and do not know discipline from schools.
  - a. Our children have lived under a system of permissiveness from a permissive welfare leaching society from vote getting politicians and therefore there is very little discipline anywhere any more.
  - b. The only systems of discipline still existing to any great extent is in a few RARE instances Education systems, the Military as always but it is fading even there today, and in Law Enforcement in which it is also fading.
  - c. When it comes to Law Enforcement it is not the rights of any criminal which are important they simply must be executed but it is the RIGHTS OF SOCIETY which are important.
  - d. *{(ff) Any logical individual should understand (I guess we cannot assume that legislators and judges are such) that a criminal, by definition and total volitional function, has put himself outside the rules of society and THEREFORE HAS NO RIGHTS UNDER THOSE RULES}*
- v. From our Bicentennial year it is a shame we are and have been so mixed up that we as a society do not think like Americans any longer.
- vi. People do not understand that EVERYTHING IN LIFE IS RELATED TO AUTHORITY and when people do not relate to authority and in freedom do not exercise self discipline then the inevitable happens whereby the nation destroys itself not having or recognizing authority and failing to recognizing that ALL FREEDOM IS USELESS WITHOUT AUTHORITY.
  - a. In academic discipline the first issue is SILENCE of the class
  - b. All freedom depends on discipline and our freedoms depend on the people who assemble and listen to Bible Doctrine without noise and talking but in concentration and therefore these people surrender their freedom in order to concentrate.
  - c. Nothing which is a distraction to Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine is allowed into the congregation during the presentation of Bible Doctrine under academic discipline.
  - d. The believer is free to attend but surrender at least part of his freedom at the door when they enter the congregation until the AMEN is said.
  - e. This is the means of moving from Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and becoming a spiritual atlas supporting that generation historically and protecting the nation from destruction.
- vii. In addition we have freedom today as a result of military victory in the past.
  - a. Individual men are FREE to enter military service but by so doing they voluntarily give up their freedoms for military discipline under military authority systems.
  - b. And Military victory only comes as a result of this strict discipline.
  - c. The effective fighting ability of any military organization cannot exceed its inculcation of discipline.
- viii. Therefore we can see that ALL of our freedom is based on at least 2 systems where there is NO FREEDOM in the systems at all.
  - a. The local church under academic discipline where we can concentrate and focus on inculcation.
  - b. The Military establishment where we are free to enlist and then lose all freedoms on induction.

- c. These should be the 2 best disciplined organizations in the world (unfortunately it is rare in both cases today).
    - d. It is through discipline that freedom continues.
  - ix. We have some freedoms today and a bit of prosperity still existing as well and it is not based on someone in the federal reserve (which is not part of the government but a group of banking organizations) printing more and more currency.
    - a. Our prosperity is based on great tycoons of industrial and business organizations and this could only happen under FREEDOM and free enterprise such as we had in the past in America.
    - b. Between coming into this country penniless and becoming a millionaire in 25-30 years is the whole system and structure of DISCIPLINE in a business corporation.
    - c. The labor unions have destroyed this discipline and are totally destroying our prosperity and they are in fact ANTI prosperity.
    - d. They along with the government are trying to kill this goose which lays the golden egg and eventually they will succeed in its destruction and elimination of all of our prosperity.
    - e. Next to the Roman Empire the United States of America has been (no longer is) the most prosperous nation in the history of mankind as a result of FREE ENTERPRISE.
    - f. Free enterprise is NOT just a story of RAGS to RICHES but of ONE man with great leadership and courage and understanding in business and a LOYAL organization under him under strict discipline.
  - x. It is always DISCIPLINE which provides everything in all areas of life.
- 5. Self discipline, Academic Discipline, and recognition of the authority of the Pastor Teacher all add up to continuing in the consistent Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine under the Filling of God the Holy Spirit and Grace Apparatus for Perception.
  - i. The secret to staying on the right side of Human History is 2Tim 3:14 and there is no substitute for maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul which calls for daily consistent function under the Filling of God the Holy Spirit and Grace Apparatus for Perception.

**2Tim 3:14**

**v14: But you, however, continue abiding, remaining continuing by means of those Metabolized Bible Doctrines resident in your Stream of Consciousness of the Soul, which you have constantly continuously learned under the Grace Apparatus for Perception and have received confidence in life, about history, in the Lord, about your objectives in the Spiritual Life, knowing in the past with the result that you keep knowing from whom, God the Holy Spirit and your right Pastor Teacher, you learned under strict academic discipline those doctrines**

**Lesson #83      Series # 469      2Tim 3:15**

- I. History & Military Victories:
  - A. Napoleon in his time of conquest defeated every major European nation decisively including Russia.
    - 1. Napoleon however was never able to decisively defeat the British Army
  - B. The British Army when it came into contact with the people of the United States of America Military and every time this occurred we defeated them.
    - 1. England went on from that time to defeat many nations in many places under many different circumstances and by the time of the end of Victoria as queen they were the most powerful nation in the world with the exception of the United States of America.
  - C. It is amazing how the Grace of God is so obvious in our own history and we should never have won the War for Independence nor the War of 1812.

1. This is the Grace of God at work and some fine dedicated soldiers functioning effectively.
  2. This is demonstrated by the armies which were composed of citizens and a FEW professionals and yet not once did any other nation ever come close to victory over the United States of America.
- D. What made this difference and WHY could these people in the United States of America successfully win wars over Great Britain 2 times
1. The answer is found in these past generations where the people of this nation WERE on the right side of history.
  2. If the people in the United States of America today were facing a comparable power seeking to remove their freedom there is NO WAY we could succeed (1976) and it is questionable today as well.
- E. We stand as a nation on the brink of being totally on the wrong side of history.
1. 2Tim 3 is of extreme importance for us.
  2. The United States of America has been the only nation in history to win any wars against England at the peak of her power.
  3. Napoleon could not do it being the greatest military genius of history but we did not have any of his caliber but still we won.
  4. By far the smartest officer we had in our war with England was Benedict Arnold and not being recognized finally defected.
  5. We had dogged determination in Washington, we had stupidity in many general officers like Gates and others yet we being on the right side of Human History were carried to victory by the Lord.
- F. We met a threat of internal dissension in the 2<sup>nd</sup> war for independence which could have gone either way but had to go the way it did because of “Manifest Destiny” and yet survived many things since them.
1. Having survived these many things and having moved to world greatness we have as a nation failed to realize and recognize many things in our heritage and history.
  2. We have failed to recognize the source of our blessings
  3. We have failed to appreciate the laws which give to us our freedoms today
  4. We have failed to see that Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ controls Human History and the Laws of Divine Establishment were ordained to protect our freedom.
  5. We have failed to recognize and see the generation after generation of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace believers who have been our spiritual atlas’ in our history.
  6. We have failed to see that our national application of the Laws of Divine Establishment have given us our prosperity and success and greatness having given us a living standard which is higher than the living standard of any people in all of Human History with the exception of the ROMAN EMPIRE.
  7. In all of Human History no people have ever had better standards and the people in our ghettos have better living conditions than many of those in Russia and china and other communist nations.
  8. We have however ignored the source of all of our greatness.
  9. When a people fail to recognize and appreciate the source of their greatness and prosperity in history from God the Father, Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ controlling Human History and Military Victory they are on the wrong side of history.
- G. We had a generation coming along in the period of 1976 who did not understand discipline at all and today in 2019 this is FAR FAR WORSE.
1. Their objectives were focused on stimulation of any sort and defying all authority ever to exist and the MEN at that time looked like FEMALES (Not quite as bad today).

2. We don't any longer look or act or think like Americans nor do with think in terms of the source of all that we have.
  3. There is something wrong with America and you can see and hear it with the old rock concerts and the new rap recordings and we have become more and more stupid anti authority, anti Christ and anti Christian country.
  4. Our standards, concepts, ideas, and PRINCIPLES are all gone and if it were not for a few believers in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace we would have been totally gone more than 40 years ago and are on the brink of this today.
  5. Without Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul the believer will react to historical disaster and fall into reversionism and being miserable and himself along with his nation be destroyed.
- H. If ever there has been a time even more so than in the 1970s we are as a nation ON THE WRONG SIDE OF HISTORY.

II. Deliverance as a result of spiritual heritage:

- A. In this verse there are 4 prepositional phrases and they tell the story of the whole verse.
1. The first "from Childhood or A Child" indicates timothy's exposure to the gospel at an early age from the Old Testament Scripture and responded to it
    - i. Timothy is an illustration of a believer in the Church Age who was saved by the content of the Old Testament Scripture gospel information.
  2. The second "For Salvation" indicates that the first inhale of the soul in regeneration is the inhale of the gospel at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God
    - i. The unbeliever does not possess a human spirit therefore at gospel hearing God the Holy Spirit acts as a Human Spirit in order to give perception of the gospel  
**1Cor 2:14-16**
      - a. This is Common Grace
  3. The third "through Faith" is the first Positive Volition act toward Bible Doctrine known as efficacious grace
    - i. This is the ministry of God the Holy Spirit at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God carrying the faith of the believer in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ to make it efficacious for Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God.
  4. The fourth "In Christ" denotes permanent entrance into the Plan of God
    - i. This occurs through the Baptism of God the Holy Spirit resulting in placing us into union with Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and making us a member of the Royal Family of God forever.
- B. These prepositional phrases together form the concept of Spiritual Heritage.
- C. Principles:
1. v15 becomes the perfect illustration of the "spiritual breathing" which occurs beginning at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God.
    - i. At Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God we inhale the gospel and exhale faith alone in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ alone.
  2. The key to the analogy is found in the NOUN (gr) brephos meaning a baby, infant or newborn child.
  3. In developing this concept we note that in the human realm the EMBRYO of FETUS is NOT a human being.
    - i. Until God puts 'Neshemah' the Breath of Life the fetus is not officially a child.
    - ii. A miscarriage is not a birth and the embryo of fetus is not a human being.
  4. At birth the child is not officially a member of the Human Race until God gives life to that emerged fetus
    - i. God does this individually giving the spark of life to every born fetus.
    - ii. At the point of giving this spark of life that fetus inhales and exhales and at that point is a human being child.



- iii. It is NOT a member of the Human Race until God gives life to the fetus AT PHYSICAL BIRTH.
  - iv. This is a very important doctrinal issue and NO fetus is a child in the womb.
  - v. Reflex Motility is BIOLOGICAL life but without the imputation of Neshemah to the format soul that biological life is NOT a human being.
  - vi. Life can only be give by God and is given at physical birth.
  - vii. The fetus is not a human life until GOD gives the spark of life “neshemah” at physical birth.
  - viii. First the child then INHALES and then Exhales with some sort of cry.
5. The unbeliever is spiritually dead the first thing with regard to spiritual life he INHALES is the gospel under the ministry of God the Holy Spirit in common grace.
- i. When he EXHALES Faith alone in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ alone this is the point of Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God under the doctrine of efficacious grace.
  - ii. This is the point of regeneration where this person then becomes spiritually alive with a NEW human spirit created for him by God the Holy Spirit.
  - iii. The ministry of God the Holy Spirit in common grace is our inhale of the gospel and our understanding the gospel.
  - iv. The exhale for spiritual life is Faith alone in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ alone and is efficacious grace from God the Holy Spirit carrying our faith for effective salvation.
6. This is the first spiritual breath of the believer and at this point God the Holy Spirit also enters into union with this individual in the indwelling of God the Holy Spirit.
- i. This individual is entered by the ministry of the Baptism of God the Holy Spirit into union with Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ making him a member of the Royal Family of God.
  - ii. This verse is classified as the first case of SOUL breathing in the Royal Family of God
  - iii. It explains the mechanics of regeneration.
7. From Regeneration on the HERITAGE of the believer is Bible Doctrine.
- i. Whether we realize it or not we are NOT saved by any experience.
  - ii. We are saved by the INHALE of a category of Bible Doctrine called the gospel pertaining to Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God.
  - iii. In this inhale we understood the gospel not because we were qualified to understand it.
  - iv. We were not qualified to understand the doctrine of the gospel of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ being spiritually dead.
  - v. This is just like the baby when they are born they are dead until they Inhale for the first time and Exhale a cry for the first time.
  - vi. This baby is dead until God imputes Neshemah at physical birth.
  - vii. So it is with us at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God and the doctrines of the gospel of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ we cannot understand being spiritually dead
  - viii. With an expression of Positive Volition at God Consciousness when the gospel is presented in grace God the Holy Spirit then is obligated to act as a human spirit to enable us to understand these gospel principles of salvation.
  - ix. At faith alone in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ alone being still spiritually dead our faith is also useless but because of the expression of this Positive Volition God the Holy Spirit is again obligated to carry this faith for us to Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God.
  - x. This is our INHALE and EXHALE which makes us spiritually alive.

- xi. Both of these processes are GRACE processes and the MEANS by which we are regenerated or “born again” is the means by which our Spiritual Life will be conducted now and FOREVER.
  - xii. COMMON GRACE + EFFICACIOUS GRACE == Salvation Grace.
  - xiii. Then we are the recipients of Living or Logistical Grace and when we reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God we receive Super Grace and possibly Ultra Super Grace and then Dying Grace and in eternity Surpassing Grace.
  - xiv. The whole spiritual life after Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God is all by GRACE.
  - xv. We are born again by WORKS or ABILITIES since DEAD PEOPLE CANNOT WORK AND HAVE NO ABILITY FOR ANYTHING WHICH WILL EVER IMPRESS GOD.
8. We respond with Positive Volition in our soul to Bible Doctrine of the gospel which causes us to express FAITH alone in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ alone.
    - i. It is Bible Doctrine which is our spiritual heritage.
    - ii. Our salvation is based on our understanding of a point of Bible Doctrine and acting on that doctrine with faith in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
    - iii. Whomever presented the gospel to us said something which was accurate and that God the Holy Spirit could use to cause us to understand the issue of the gospel and this is what we responded to.
    - iv. Our response was an exhale of faith in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and we were BORN again.
    - v. Our heritage therefore by which we are Born Again is Bible Doctrine.
  9. Our human heritage begins with our parents and they provide an understanding of certain things with regard to our heritage
    - i. Our race
    - ii. Our looks
    - iii. Our gender
    - iv. Our genetics.
  10. The fact that we are alive means we have parents and a human lineage going all the way back to Adam and Ishah as part of the Human Race.
  11. As believers in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and part of the Royal Family of God we all have a spiritual heritage which does not begin with who or what our parents are but with Bible Doctrine.
    - i. We all were saved by believing some point of Bible Doctrine.
  12. The inhale in the Spiritual Life starts with the doctrine of the gospel of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and the exhale is faith in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ alone.
    - i. The Spiritual Life is then based on a continuous INHALE of Bible Doctrine and EXHALE of faith in the application of Bible Doctrine to life.
    - ii. WE cannot inhale the gospel and then HOLD our breath for the rest of our physical life and grow in the Spiritual Life.
    - iii. At the point of Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God our heritage is immediately Bible Doctrine the gospel of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ
    - iv. Our Spiritual Life then MUST be for the rest of our life the inhale of Bible Doctrine for spiritual growth and exhale of Bible Doctrine in application using the Faith Rest Drill (4 categories) and other aspects of the Spiritual Life.
  13. In addition Bible Doctrine has been, is, and always will be preserved for EVERY generation in the canon of Scripture.
    - i. The origin of the bible is also a breathing process.

- ii. Inhale is the author of the individual parts of scripture receiving the information from God the Holy Spirit and the exhale is the author writing this information down as part of the canon of scripture.
- iii. God the Holy Spirit gives the thought and the author using his vocabulary and ability writes these things down to become part of the scripture.

D. These next 2 verses give our the idea of where we get our spiritual heritage.

- 1. When a person gets water or other noxious gasses into the lungs there is no room for oxygen going in and CO2 going out in breathing.
- 2. In this case you must provide Artificial Resuscitation
- 3. The reversionist is like a drowning victim needing a lot of Oxygen in a hurry.
- 4. The reversionist must get a LOT of Bible Doctrine in a hurry to recover and this is PAINFUL for them coming back.
- 5. The reversionist must in a concentrated way inhale and apply doctrine over and over in order to recover.

III. The content of soul breathing

A. Timothy had been instructed in and had known the Old Testament Scripture writing from his childhood.

- 1. At the time of the writing of 2<sup>nd</sup> Timothy the New Testament Scripture canon had not been completed and is not what is referenced here.
- 2. The Canon of the New Testament Scripture was not completed until 96 AD.
- 3. The Old Testament Scripture is what is referred to here and is composed of 3 parts
  - i. The 5 books of Moses == The Torah
    - a. Written by one man an Ultra Super Grace believer unique as a prophet and spiritual person.
  - ii. The Nebiim == The Prophets
    - a. Written by human authors who had the office of Prophet and were apparently at least Super Grace believers and a few Ultra Super Grace believers.
      - i ) Isaiah
      - ii ) Jeremiah
      - iii ) Ezekiel
      - iv ) Hosea
      - v ) Jonah
      - vi ) Micah
      - vii ) Obidiah
      - viii ) Nahum
      - ix ) Habakuk
      - x ) Joshua
      - xi ) Samuel
      - xii ) Malakai
      - xiii ) Etc.
  - iii. Kethubiim == The Writings
    - a. Written by those who had the gift of Prophecy but NOT the office of Prophet.
      - i ) David – King
      - ii ) Solomon – King
      - iii ) Daniel – Prime Minister
      - iv ) Ezra
      - v ) Nehemiah – General Officer
    - b. these all were involved in other duties but all had the gift of prophecy.

- B. When Timothy was a child the Old Testament Scripture existed in detail and he found Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ as savior from the Old Testament Scripture.
1. His earliest spiritual growth came from that part of the word of God.
  2. Not until he came into contact with Paul did he know that there was such a thing as the Church Age and begin to get the doctrine of the Royal Family of God.
  3. Already he like Apollos his spiritual growth came from study of the Old Testament Scripture canon.
  4. All scripture is able to instruct us in the areas of Bible Doctrine.
- C. Here we have Timothy functioning under this concept of Inhale and Exhale of Bible Doctrine becoming a believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace for the 2<sup>nd</sup> time.
1. The Old Testament Scripture and Pauline teaching gives us the result of Timothy reaching again Super Grace.
  2. By means of the Inhale of the gospel of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ, and exhale of faith in the Christ, Timothy and all of us as Royal Family of God become members of the Royal Family of God.
  3. Doctrine was taken in to your soul in common grace, it was Bible Doctrine which was acted on by faith alone in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ alone resulting in eternal salvation because of efficacious grace.
  4. It is Bible Doctrine which is our spiritual heritage and IF YOU START WITH BIBLE DOCTRINE YOU MUST STAY WITH BIBLE DOCTRINE FOR ALL OF YOUR SPIRITUAL LIFE.
  5. At exhale of faith in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ God the Holy Spirit enters all new believers into union with Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ making them Royal Family of God.
- D. Principle:
1. Every believer has a spiritual heritage and God does not change the rule in the middle of the game.
  2. God does not start you in the game one way and then change the rules in the game as you go along.
  3. There was not place for human efforts or abilities for salvation and therefore there is no place for them in spiritual growth and as part of your spiritual heritage.
  4. Whatever production you have for the Lord is on the basis of GRACE and God has provided the means of that production and that has nothing to do with YOUR SPIRITUAL ADVANCE.
  5. It is very important to understand, YOU DO NOT GROW OR ADVANCE SPIRITUALLY BY WORKING.
  6. The only way to advance in the Spiritual Life is the same way you started in the Spiritual Life WITH BIBLE DOCTRINE.
  7. Spiritual growth occurs in the same way as Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God you inhale doctrine and exhale doctrine in both situations.
  8. It is Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul which is your spiritual heritage and has impact on Human History.
  9. IT IS NOT HUMAN EFFORTS OR WORKS. **Eph 2:8-9**
- E. In the Spiritual Life all true production is related to Bible Doctrine and on the basis of the level of Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
1. There is no work of effort you can do for Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God, Spirituality, nor Spiritual Growth.
  2. Things like prayer, witnessing, working in the local church are productions but they are not the means of your spiritual growth and AT BEST are the expression of it.
  3. As members of the Royal Family of God our heritage is Bible Doctrine.

v15: and that you have known from childhood, the sacred writings of the Old Testament Canon of Scripture , which are able to instruct you or give you wisdom with reference to The Salvation through faith in Christ Jesus.

**Lesson #84**

**Series # 469**

**2Tim 3:16**

- I. Since the 70s our nation has been moving toward historical disaster but we still can at this point recognize and honor Freedom through Military Victory:
  - A. Samuel Woodfield, 1<sup>st</sup> Lt. United States Army, 60<sup>th</sup> Infantry, 5<sup>th</sup> Infantry Division, Cunnel France 12 Oct 1918 (Only 101 years ago).
    1. Born in Indiana Jefferson County and always wanted to be a soldier and QUIT school in the 4<sup>th</sup> Grade and tried to enlist and go to the Spanish American war but was turned down.
    2. During the Philippine Insurrection with the Morrows he finally enlisted and got into that war making an exaggeration with regard to his age being 16 at the time.
    3. He had been shooting all his life and was an expert shot and became a famous fighter of the Morrows.
    4. He also fought in several Brush wars and had great combat experience and finally was promoted to Buck Sargent and sent to Laredo and fought Poncho Via.
    5. When World War I came along he had such a good combat record in these brush wars that he was promoted to 1<sup>st</sup> Lt.
    6. In the case cited above he was part of a reserve unit in the 1<sup>st</sup> Army commanded by General Pershing and his battalion was assigned a spot supposedly in reserve.
    7. He determined however that this spot was heavily organized with German machine gun emplacements and the Germans were about to flank them.
    8. He reported this to his Battalion commander who had no combat experience in this type of war and He was told to just do what you can about it.
    9. He took his company and in the mist of early morning moved them right on top of these emplacements before the mist cleared and then attacked them.
    10. He also went on and kept advancing with only 1 company so that the Germans thought that they had somehow fouled up their flank attack and ALL of them pulled back.
    11. He also received many other medals and was made a Chevalie of the French Legion of Honor.
    12. He then got out of the service after the war was over but then again reenlisted as a private and worked up to a Sargent again and after 22 years of service he retired and went back to the farm in Indiana.
    13. When World War II came along he tried to enlist again but someone remembered his name and that Pershing had said the this man was the greatest soldier in the American Expeditionary Force.
    14. Along with Sargent York he had been designated to set up the ceremony on the grave of the Unknown Soldier at Arlington.
    15. The recognized his name and immediately gave him a commission as a major and in 1942-3 he went to hundreds of Army Camps and lectured on battle courage to give men some understanding why they were undergoing this training.
    16. By the time it was over he had lectured 2x a day in army camps in the United States of America and other places for 2 straight years.
    17. He was at that point a major at age 65 and the age limitation caught up with him and he was retired again.
    18. He lived to 1951 and was in a small apartment and he was found having been dead 3 days from a heart attack.
    19. He was Always a very quiet person, very efficient, very professional and VERY much a soldier and he left this life very quietly alone.
    20. **This is the person who makes it possible for us to sit and assemble and enjoy the teaching of the Word of God today and every day.**

- B. We the people of the United States of America are a bunch of Idiots and have lost every opportunity to be a truly great nation and provide historically the basis for evangelism and also for STOPPING communism and islam.
- C. WE have been and continue to be on the **WRONG SIDE OF HISTORY** despite men like Samuel Woodfield.

II. Deliverance from the Wrong Side of History continued:

- A. Principle – How devastating can it be to get on the wrong side of history?
  - 1. In military history 2 men can have the same characteristics and 1 becomes a great military leader and the other a total flop.
    - i. The problem is Tenacity in Peace Time and this is the most difficult thing to be a good soldier in peace time taking more character and tenacity and ability to interpret contemporary history than anything else.
  - 2. Politicians have totally failed in this area and as a result in Peace times the military is not only neglected but also badly abused and persecuted by stupid politicians.
    - i. The same ones which embroil us in wars are the ones who abuse the peacetime military.
  - 3. As a result for those who are truly professionals in the military tenacity and character is developed in peacetime.
    - i. The soldier has to endure poor treatment at the hands of stupid politicians and fellow citizens yet he is the very basis for FREEDOM in the nation.
  - 4. All freedom is purchased on the battlefield by the military and never ever by politicians.
    - i. Politicians never provide freedom but always as they are today TAKE it AWAY.
  - 5. To be a dedicated professional soldier and rise to flag or general rank in the military in peacetime has great dangers since Top Commanders at the beginning of any war are always vulnerable.
    - i. The reasoning is that the Unites States of America always starts its wars with disaster NEVER being prepared for war and there always has to be a scapegoat and the top commanders are usually the ones upon whom blame is placed for everything.
    - ii. The real scapegoats are the Presidents, congressmen, senators and all those who have abused the military and taken away all their training facilities, armaments, funding and even men and giving this to people who would be better off starving to death than on welfare.
    - iii. Top commanders are therefore scapegoats for a disaster not of their making.
    - iv. Every man who makes this advance in any military field in peacetime recognizes this potential and that in time of disaster and attack he will be the one upon whom blame will rest.
    - v. 2 of the great military men who we had at the beginning of World War II were relieved of duty and we never had opportunity to use their great ability.
      - a. Admiral Husband Kimmel
      - b. General Walter C. Short
      - c. Good officers and well trained officers.
    - vi. Franklin Roosevelt to cover up for George Marshal and himself made a scapegoat out of these 2 great officers and is our history and the tragedy of it as a result of the FAILURE of every generation to properly interpret contemporary History.
  - 6. Most generals fail however because of their lack of ability to properly interpret contemporary history.
    - i. From the beginning of very ancient History to the Railroad development in the middle of the 19<sup>th</sup> century there has been one single problem.

- ii. Most officers never figure the logistics problem and if and when they do they become great officers like Arthur Wellesly who became one of the 2 greatest names in British Military history as the Duke of Wellington.
  - iii. He was not a brilliant general and the British rarely have a brilliant general officer since they become suspicious of them quickly and bury them out of sight, Marlboro was the exception.
  - iv. Wellesly sat down and then figured out the problem that a good transport mule or oxcart as the means of army supply trains from the ancient times of Assyria to the middle of the 19<sup>th</sup> century could travel 16 miles a day safely and do that for 4 days before they had to have 1 days rest.
  - v. He developed a system of logistics based on these facts and used it against Napoleon in Spain and it was a beautiful thing.
  - vi. The British system had been to rise in the morning have breakfast and march for 8 miles and stop for Tea and Lunch and then march for another 8 miles and then camp and that is as far as they go else they would outrun their supplies.
  - vii. If the unit outruns its supplies they are in grave trouble since they only carry so many cartridges and caps and food etc.
7. Wellington became famous because he was able to interpret contemporary history and realized that you cannot outrun your supplies and logistics.
- i. For all of military history they have used Ox carts and Mules for logistical supply transport and when it was over having figured out this logistics principle he was the ONLY general officer who ever defeated Napoleon EVER.
  - ii. Every defeat in past history occurred when the army outran its supplies.
  - iii. In contemporary history Napoleon got into a jam when he outran his supplies as well.
  - iv. All the french generals whom he had defeated at the end of the war said of him and his army that they were the best army in the world and thank God there was not more of them.
  - v. This is the proper interpretation of contemporary history.
8. Marlboro and every great Hittite and Assyrian and Persian generals all did the same thing.
- B. After 1816 something changed in history, Napoleon changed things and some people saw it coming like Frederick the Great and it is called historically the "Industrial Revolution" with the organizing of Large Cities, the development and use of coal, the development and use of the Steam Engine and Ships and all sorts of industry.
- 1. All these changed history and the people who could interpret contemporary history came out on top and the people who could not failed.
  - 2. It is generally the GERMAN military which was given historically credit for discovering the proper use of Staff, Industrialization, Military Mass.
  - 3. Military Mass never existed prior to the middle of the 19<sup>th</sup> century and many people still don't understand it YET.
  - 4. This is what results when special forces units like the Rangers are Misused and the principle is when you have a small elite unit and they are not supported properly then you destroy your best trained men.
  - 5. There are still general officers which think that way today in the 70s and even today in the 21<sup>st</sup> century.
  - 6. At that time there were 2 ranger battalions which had no proper infantry support and we lacked any general officers who had any brains to interpret contemporary history.
  - 7. In World War II we LOST ever elite force we ever had the British Elite, Darby's Rangers at Anzio, 10<sup>th</sup> Mountain Division, the Special Forces All of them for this reason.

8. There is a place for Elite Units but the United States of America military has always misused them.
  9. **No war can ever be won by Elite Forces and Rangers don't win wars but are to be given special assignments.**
  10. It is ONLY MASSES OF ARMIES WHICH WIN WARS AND THEY MUST REFLECT CONTEMPORARY HISTORY AND REFLECT CHANGES WHICH HAVE COME IN HISTORY AS A RESULT OF INDUSTRIAL AND TECHNOLOGICAL CHANGES WHICH HAVE OCCURRED IN A NATION IN ITS HISTORY.
  11. Most generals and politicians cannot think in these terms.
- C. There was only 1 man in the world who caught on to what happened in the War between the States and he was a German
1. He was outranked by a man named Vonmolkie who said that the war between the states was a couple of "rabble" armies fighting each other all over the American continent.
  2. Vonmolkie was WRONG but this other German realized that history was changing radically and that masses of armies were the thing of the future and the Spartans and their small unit tactics were fine and the Rangers at Anzio were very gallant but they were all wiped out and their mission not completed.
  3. Elites are nice and make GREAT movies and TV shows and is very romantic but it is like the Polish who had Calvary which still had lancers in 1939 when the Germans invaded Poland and they charged German armor.
- D. The greatest interpretation of Warfare in history occurred with the Yankee army during the war between the states.
1. The Greatest individual soldiers in the world were in the Army of Northern Virginia for the south.
  2. The Greatest general officers of the war were men like Lee, Jackson, Hood BUT THEY LOST THE WAR.
  3. They lost the war because they did not correctly interpret history in 1850-60 and they were right in their stand with regard to states rights but the south was living in the past and 100 years behind history.
  4. The industrial revolution was HERE and going on IN THE NORTHERN STATES.
  5. Therefore many wonderful gallant southerners from rank and file to general officers near 2 million of them and they lost it being man for man better men and officer to officer much better officers.
  6. For 2.5 years they won almost everything but they still LOST the war.
  7. The Yankee army was at its greatest in 1862-3 when they LOST and were smashed at Chancellorsville, Chickamoga, when both southern armies won decisive victories and as a result southern armies were never the same after that.
  8. Something went out of those men and after this they never had the same Esprit DE Corps they had prior to these 2 battles.
  9. They lost their Esprit DE Corps because NO ONE in the south could correctly interpret contemporary history and the true meaning of the Industrial Revolution and as a result they were not adaptable.
  10. NO one in the south understood that the south was going to be the proving ground in that war for a principle which would change history.
- E. In 1861 the Yankee army was a mass of recruits learning close order drill and they then went to war against the south as a mass of raw recruits poorly led, gutty but ignorant of war.
1. They went up against the south at Bull Run and were clobbered.
  2. In 1862 the Yankee army was a group of soldiers now knowing how to drill and learning how to be a LARGE army and in this war roughly 2 million Yankees vs somewhat less than 2 million southern men.
    - i. They were to massive armies fighting over terrain.



3. The Yankee army was a group learning how to be an army and again were clobbered at Jackson's valley, 2<sup>nd</sup> Monassas, Antitum, etc.
  4. In 1863 it was an army with a group of Officers Learning how to be officers and staff learning Staff work and when they received their most crushing defeats at Chancellorsville and Chickamoga.
  5. Something happened and the Yankee armies were crushed time and again but it never made any difference and some of the most brilliant gallant officers and men were dying everywhere but the south was not getting any closer to winning.
  6. They did not understand why with great tactics and strategy and being very gallant and noble and courageous this was perfect.
  7. The southern army was the GREATEST army of individuals in WORLD history BUT it was fighting a MASS military machine in the north.
  8. It was not fighting an ARMY but a MASS military machine and accidentally the north fell into perfect alignment with contemporary history and the industrial revolution.
  9. They were a perfect reflection of the time in which they lived and they organized an army studied more today than any other army even the southern army.
- F. No matter your preferences or prejudices you must never lose track of what is going on in your period of contemporary history.
1. The principle of adaptability and application is extremely important.
  2. The Yankees were poorly led and a bunch of confused sheep being many immigrated German and others and they came to this country in the first place because they did not like the Prussian military
  3. They were generally ANTI military and suddenly found themselves conscripted and in uniform and the Yankees had to get officers who could speak German and Irish to even give proper commands.
  4. The Irish would not even be led by anything by an Irish officer.
  5. They were a mess of nothing but they were a MASS.
  6. The point is that FIRST they became a MASS in 1861, then they became military 1862 and then they became a Machine 1862 and the only thing a machine needs is some leadership and someone learned to drive the machine – Ulysses S. Grant.
  7. As a result they WON the war.
- G. The importance of being on the right side of history and interpreting contemporary history is essential.
1. This is important in any profession and most important in the military and should be most important in the political profession but in the United States of America politicians are the dumbest people in the world who cannot get any job because they cannot think and as a result go to Washington and their stupidity is developed into disaster after disaster.
  2. The south was not industrialized and was an agricultural country except for a very few places and they were way behind the times.
  3. The south started the war with a group of magnificent individuals and ended with a magnificent group of individuals.
  4. The Yankees started with a bunch of confused sheep and ended with the first great military machine in history.
- H. The south lost the war because of:
1. Manifest Destiny
  2. Failure to Interpret Contemporary History.
  3. The north was compatible with historical trends and the south was not.
  4. The south represented failure to interpret contemporary history and its industry was 100 years behind the north and its history.

5. The south had better soldiers, leaders and consistently defeated the North but before the south could win the north had the FIRST MASS MILITARY MACHINE in all of Human History.
  6. Despite being decisively defeated many times the north held together as an army and they in fact retreated as an army and when into battle as a mass and retreated as a mass and never lost their mass.
  7. A couple of smart generals realized what they had and started to learn to drive it.
  8. Grant was reckless and thought nothing of losing 25 thousand to make a point but in the last year of the war was outflanking Lee and put him on the defense which was the end of the war even then.
- I. Once the war was over the machine was destroyed and having won it was disbanded.
1. The thing is that the GERMANS were the only people who saw that mass military machine in the light of contemporary history and used it.
  2. The people who created and led it never caught on to this principle and wiped out that machine after the war and went back to fighting the Indians in the west like the Spartans with elite units and FAILED.
  3. It was in fact ACCIDENTAL that the lined up with contemporary history because they did not understand history themselves.
  4. The result was a frontier army with a few great outfits but that was all.
- J. The Germans realized the importance of what had occurred in the United States of America and in 1870 shortly after the war between the states they launched Mass Military Machine and introduced it to the world.
1. The United States of America army was so impressed with what the Germans had done not knowing that the Germans had learned it from them.
  2. The Germans trained the Japanese and they defeated the Russians as a result.
  3. No one ever caught on to where it came from and the really tragic thing is that the United States of America military has still not caught on to the principle of Military Mass in all cases.
  4. There was only one man in all of American military history who understood this principle **Douglas MacArthur** whose genius caught on to contemporary history.
    - i. Neither Patton nor General Frederick caught on.
  5. No one knows this today because Franklin Roosevelt suppressed this as did his successor.
  6. The Germans came to the English channel and said it was a wet ditch and they could not cross it with tanks.
  7. MacArthur had the whole pacific ocean before him with his back to the Antarctic and saw how man with mass from the industrial revolution logistics pushed the Japanese right off the Pacific.
  8. MacArthur had moral and battle courage and was the greatest single soldier we have ever had when it comes to the interpretation of contemporary history and deserves great historical recognition.
  9. Many of our generals had great battle courage but were truly unable to think in terms of contemporary history.
- K. People who are able to interpret contemporary history have a dynamics which makes history.
1. MacArthur made history in World War II and were it not for being Restrained in the Korean War he would have made history again and destroyed the Chinese communists.
  2. He was pulled out by a stupid president and the most brilliant man in American military history.
    - i. We have had some very smart similar generals like Claire Chenalt but he was buried and the Air Force suffered because of it.
    - ii. In World War II the Air Force had the DUMBEST general officers in the whole world and the smartest Colonels but Chenalt was the exception.

- iii. His application was brilliant and he was able to take his perspicacity and mind and apply that to reality as the correct interpretation of contemporary history.
- L. Freedom comes through military victory and we in the United States of America begin every war with defeat because we fail to remember this doctrine.
1. Because no one is ever able to interpret history correctly we lose everything valuable about our military in peacetime.
  2. We should not lose in peace time what we have gained by the military in war.
  3. The United States of America Gains all came through the military and we were the first to introduce modern warfare in the Yankee Army of the War between the States.
  4. In time of War we GAIN and become Great and in time of peace the basis of our gain is wiped out in reduction of forces.
  5. We gained all our freedom we still have by our military in World War II and we have been losing it consistently and this is reflected in our LOSSES in Korea and Vietnam.
  6. Manifest Destiny MOVES with the military and in time of peace we insult and destroy it and turn them into sycophants kissing the butts of politicians to beg for money to support them.
- M. As a believer in the Royal Family of God we are the KEY and must be able to interpret contemporary history which is tied into our objectives of reaching Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace.
1. We cannot afford to neglect our military because Genius' are BORN but great generals are MADE.
  2. Even a genius must learn how to apply genius to reality and history and how to ADAPT military function to history so that they does its job as per the Laws of Divine Establishment.
  3. Believers in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and Ultra Super Grace are made not born.
  4. We are born again Royal Family of God as spiritual infants and are going to be made by GRACE and advance through the daily function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception to reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace.
- N. Application:
1. This whole thing could have been illustrated by American industry as well.
  2. Carnegie correctly interpreted history and made a GREAT industrial complex.
  3. This is why many immigrated to the United States of America knowing this was the place for innovation and industrial development based on the function of the north in the war between the states.
  4. The army of the north was a mass military machine and was indestructible and they fell into this situation accidentally and the Germans caught on to this and developed their industry first and then their military after.
  5. Many southern brigades carried northern equipment since the south could not supply them and they took their things from those they defeated in battle.
  6. The north was a military industrial machine and you cannot defeat such when it functions properly together.
  7. After it is all over we look at our great machine system and have guilt about it and destroy it.
  8. We bring in welfare and socialism and tell the industry which could turn out a dozen tanks a week or a ship a day that they have to change what they do and get the downtrodden in and labor unions to control them and strangle them.
- O. We are NOW and have been for a very long time on the very verge of historical disaster in the United States of America.
1. Genius is born, great generals, industrialists, statesmen are MADE.
  2. The military is highly specialized and extremely specialized technically today.

3. The military officer since the 70s has had to be a great leader and also a great administrator.
  4. It is the administration which makes the system works and when it fails it is the result of mediocrity in it.
  5. After World War II retired military officers became industrial leaders and management and some of the best run companies in the world today are the result of retired military men managing them.
- P. For the man who has the gift of Pastor Teacher if he can get into the military and learn some administrative function and develop this ability he will have a great ministry in a local church.
1. The worst management in the world today is NOT in the army but in the local churches.
  2. Officers in the military today have to conform to the most ludicrous standards they are being molded into non thinking men.
  3. We have replaced our former wartime greatness with peacetime mediocrity.
  4. Our military is a great training ground for many things needed to develop greatness in society.
  5. One of the things the people of this country said was the best way to solve the problems of MASSES in the city was: Free Public Education.
    - i. They were grossly wrong.
  6. The true thing needed to form greatness in a society is UNIVERSAL MILITARY TRAINING.
  7. This is a simple application of contemporary history and no one has even thought of it.
  8. It will make better businessmen, better people, bring back the Laws of Divine Establishment to society, recognition of authority and thereby turn things around.

**Lesson #85**

**Series # 469**

**2Tim 3:16**

- I. The Wrong Side of History Continued:
  - A. A Key part of putting a nation on the right side of history is to get Bible Doctrine to the children.
    1. Doctrines of the Christian Way of Life for the children who are believers
    2. Doctrines of the Laws of Divine Establishment for the children who are unbelievers.
    3. This teaching must be accomplished in order to prepare the children for bible study as adults and life in general.
    4. This teaching must not alienate the children so that they HATE doctrine and Reject it totally.
    5. They must be taught with reference to their own age and concentration span and to teach and train them in reference to THEIR Life which is not an adult life.
    6. They must know the objectives and they MUST not be bored or over disciplined.
    7. All children should be taught at home and in addition must learn both Self and Group discipline which is done in children's bible classes.
    8. Children's bible classes like Prepschool is designed to SUPPLEMENT the teaching of Bible Doctrine by the parents at home NOT replace it.
    9. Teaching of children must include Imagination and a Sense of Humor and they must be ENTERTAINED and taught to love Bible Doctrine.
    10. The secret to great teaching is to focus attention without being obnoxious.
    11. All teachers MUST be Teachable and one cannot be great unless he is teachable.
  - B. Operation ZOOM of Berachah Church Setting up a teaching system:
    1. Mechanics of any school must be coordinated to achieve the same desired objective.
    2. The Literature used in teaching must be accurate, current and constantly improved based on a mutual understanding and an amalgamation of thinking concerning the objectives.
      - i. Margaret Kolof from Tuscon Az. Lectured on how to teach in March 8-11, 1976

- C. In any field of endeavor for any individual without regard to the level of experience possessed or the amount of time functioning in that field when this person thinks they know all that is to know in that field they are truly ARROGANT.
  - 1. If they think they are not subject to criticism and properly critiqued for improvement they are wrong.
- II. V16 is a verse on which the whole Church Age is based.
  - A. The bible is the very center of everything in this period of history and our lives as believers.
    - 1. Communication of doctrine has led at some point in your life to Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God and spiritual growth.
  - B. There is Elipsis here and no actual verb here thus indicating great emphasis and emotional presentation and very high quality of the subject.
    - 1. This should not read “inspiration” which would indicate that what the writers took in under the Filling of God the Holy Spirit was inspired but what was subsequently written down was not.
    - 2. However, (gr) Theopneustos means both inhaled and exhaled thus “God Breathed”.
    - 3. Nothing is ever living unless it both inhales and exhales and therefore a LIVING thing has both.
    - 4. Scripture is a living thing representing the thinking of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ who in his deity cannot die and who in his physical body is in resurrection and very much alive.
    - 5. “He is Alive” was the message of the angels guarding the tomb and his thinking is alive as well.
    - 6. Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ is in session at the right hand of God the Father and he has continual existence not being able to die in his deity and as man is in Resurrection Body at the right hand of God the Father.
    - 7. He is therefore ALIVE in Hypostatic Union and the Bible is also alive.
  - C. In writing of scripture both Old Testament Scripture and New Testament Scripture we have ever kind of personality imaginable.
    - 1. The personalities of the writers included:
      - i. Sweet John
      - ii. Mixed up stupid peter
      - iii. Brilliant Paul
      - iv. Jude in the family being the step brother of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ
      - v. Scientific Mind of Luke
      - vi. Brilliant man of Moses, Isaiah, Jeremiah
      - vii. Crude people writing in Haggai and others.
    - 2. God the Holy Spirit gave the information for the written word to all these types of personalities
      - i. He did not give it to them and say RUN with it and do what you want with it.
    - 3. In the production of the Canon of Scripture there is both inhale and exhale of the information.
      - i. God the Holy Spirit provided the inspiration of the doctrine to the writer who INHALED this information which was exactly what God wanted in doctrine and policy into his mind.
      - ii. Then the writer using his personality and perspicacity and mentality EXHALED exactly what God the Holy Spirit wanted recorded in doctrine and policy.
      - iii. The inhale is within the Frame of Reference of the writer
      - iv. The Exhale is withing the Frame of Reference of all believers and expresses the personality and mentality of the writer, the time in which the writer lived ETC.
    - 4. There is no such thing as a “Hole” or “Sanctified” Language.
      - i. The Hebrew of Isaiah is very high level and very difficult to understand.

- ii. The Hebrew of Jeremiah is on the opposite end of the spectrum with vulgar language.
  - 5. Every kind of personality expresses itself differently and the EXHALE is just as much Bible Doctrine as the inhale.
    - i. God the Holy Spirit inserted via INHALE into the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul the information concerning the doctrine and it comes out in the EXHALE reflecting the personality the perspicacity, the historical era and everything about the time in which the man writing lived.
    - ii. It is STILL the word of God equal to what is given by God the Holy Spirit having gone through a process so that the man writing it was expressing it in human language based on his personality, the historical era in which he lived, his circumstances and life at the time, his discouragements, triumphs ETC.
    - iii. This provides for us EXACTLY what God had for us to learn and understand when it was provided by God the Holy Spirit to the writer in the first place.
    - iv. The material provided to the writer by God the Holy Spirit would in fact not be comprehensible to us but only to the writer with that gift.
    - v. There can be and have been and are some problems in the translations of the grammar and idioms and interpretation of the historical background and this is why the Pastor Teacher individually and independently MUST work from the original languages in order to provide a proper translation for the time in which HE is teaching.
- D. There are 3 factors:
  - 1. X == The Point of origin from God the Holy Spirit.
  - 2. Y == The point of residence in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul of the writer
  - 3. Z == The point of residence in the written canon of scripture.
  - 4. X to Y == Inhale
  - 5. Y to Z == Exhale
  - 6. Z stands as the finished product as God wants it to be in the original languages of Hebrew, Chaldean, and Greek.
  - 7. X == Y == Z, X == Z but the information is NOT stated or presented or Written in the Same form as God's Original thinking.
  - 8. There is no such thing as a Holy Language or Holy Vocabulary and we have everything from Hallelujah to Dung and Piss in the scripture.
  - 9. But all of this IS a part of Scripture.
  - 10. Therefore EVERYTHING in Z is to communicate what God provided to the writer in X inhale.
  - 11. X becomes Z by going through the processing of Y the human author, his vocabulary, his background, his perspicacity, his historical era, his personal condition in life, ETC.
- E. Inhale of X to Y
  - 1. God the Holy Spirit communicated to the human authors his complete and coherent message known as the Mind of Thinking of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ which we call Bible Doctrine.
  - 2. The message provided by God the Holy Spirit to the human author of scripture was NOT only for their generation but for all future generations of Human History.
    - i. In 2 Timothy Paul lived about 1900 years prior to our time.
    - ii. The generations have changed in this time and though this passage of scripture was for Timothy in his generation it is also for us in our generation.
    - iii. {(ff) this puts into a proper light the Constitution of the United States of America and the fact that it is NOT obsolete and not out dated but totally and completely

pertinent for our generation just as it was for the generation of those who authored it}

- iv. The changes of historical circumstances and languages does not change one iota of what is written in God's communication to us in this period of history.
3. While the human authors of scripture had many OTHER messages which they communicated to their own generation ONLY what God intended for ALL generations was written down in the canon of Scripture.
  - i. Paul as an example gave Many message not recorded but what is recorded is what God wants us to KNOW from his ministry.

**2Sam 23:2-3, Is 59:21, Jer 1:9, Matt 22:42-43, Mk 12:36, Acts 4:24:25, 28:25**

4. The human authors inhaled the pertinent information provided by God the Holy Spirit for the content of scripture.
- F. Exhale from Y to Z
1. Once inhaled into their souls the human authors of scripture wrote in their own language of communication either Hebrew, Chaldean, or Greek, the divine message to mankind.
  2. In writing down this Spirit given information the Author did not waive his own human intelligence nor his vocabulary, nor his individuality, nor his personality, nor his personal feelings and these are all included in the written form of the message.
  3. Therefore the information given by God the Holy Spirit to the author was written withing the framework of his human intelligence, vocabulary, individuality, personality, personal feelings etc.
  4. What the author wrote under these conditions was PERMANENTLY recorded in perfect accuracy in the ORIGINAL languages of Scripture.
- G. The doctrine is that X == Z going through certain changes in order that it might be lucidly communicated to pertinent members of the believers of the Human Race so that it can be UNDERSTOOD.
1. God is not trying to impress us but to communicate to us.
  2. **God the Holy Spirit so supernaturally directed the authors of scripture that without waiving their human intelligence, individuality, literary style, their personal feelings or any other personal factor his own complete and coherent message to man is recorded in perfect accuracy in the original languages of scripture the very words bearing the authority of DIVINE authorship.**
  3. The inhale of Bible Doctrine has a counterpart in the formation of scripture.
- H. The Human Child:
1. In the woman's uterus the embryo or fetus is NOT a human being and any movement of the fetus in the uterus is REFLEX MOTILITY but NOT a human being.
  2. ONLY after the fetus is exited from the uterus do certain things happen which makes this fetus a Human Being.
  3. The point of physical birth is the point when the fetus becomes a human child.
  4. At this point of birth and exit of the fetus from the uterus GOD must give life "Neshemah" the Spark of Life putting it into the format soul after exit from the uterus and this is where life begins for every human being.
  5. God exhales the "breath of life" or Spark of Life and the emerging fetus INHALES this breath of life.
  6. The child having inhaled the Breath of Life or Spark of Life EXHALES and emits a cry and this child is NOW alive and a human being.
- I. All scripture is God breathed and God had to put the concepts of doctrine into the human author and the author inhaled this information and had to exhale it exactly the way God wanted it to be recorded.
1. The child comes into the world in exactly the same way Bible Doctrine comes to us in the canon of scripture.

2. Because of the Fall of man the Old Sin Nature as part of the body but and God provided for this in a second birth we know as Regeneration.
  3. Therefore when we make Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God we are Born Again and regenerated.
  4. In this case the “Neshemah” is part of Bible Doctrine called the Gospel of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ dealing with salvation.
  5. This information is presented by some other human being and the individual to which it is presented is spiritually dead and the INHALE is taken by God the Holy Spirit and made a reality for that spiritually dead person under his “Common Grace” ministry.
  6. This information is Exhaled by the individual as Positive Volition or Acceptance of the Information or Metabolizing the information and Again God the Holy Spirit takes the information accepting the Positive Volition and making it EFFECTIVE for Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God under his ministry of Efficacious Grace.
  7. This results in Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God.
  8. Therefore the spiritual death with which we are born is resolved by the inhale of the gospel of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and God the Holy Spirit making it REAL to us and then our exhale under Efficacious grace of Faith alone in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ alone for Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God.
  9. {(ff) Again this same illustration is what occurs in the Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine where we inhale the doctrine taught by our right Pastor Teacher and under Operation Z God the Holy Spirit carries this information from the human spirit to the Left Lobe of the Soul of the soul and when we Exhale an expression of Positive Volition or Acceptance of this information of Doctrine he again carries it as Metabolized Bible Doctrine into our Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul making it available for application to life and experience.
- J. In this entire verse in the original manuscript there are no VERBS and IS is placed here for ease of understanding in English.
1. The Elipsis here emphasizes the IMPORTANCE and the INTENSE concentration of the information in this VERSE.
  2. The first profit as a Christian is not what you DO in any aspect of the Spiritual Life but is Metabolized Bible Doctrine in your Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.

**Lesson #86      Series # 469      2Tim 3:16**

- I. The wrong side of history continued:
  - A. Apart from Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul there is no possibility of being on the right side of history, national survival, perpetuation of freedom nor any blessings from God.
    1. One of the greatest disasters for a believer in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ is to be caught up in a historical disaster and not have enough doctrine to cope with the disaster.
    2. This results in reaction to the disaster and falling into reversionism
    3. The WHY ME people who cannot understand historical disaster, being unable to properly interpret contemporary history fail to apply Bible Doctrine and to orient to circumstances of adversity and therefore react to history, pressure, disaster and enter reversionism as a result of lack of Metabolized Bible Doctrine to handle the situation.
  - B. John S C Abbot, Madame Roulan (the french revolution) 1792 Paris
    1. A detailed and very graphic description as to how the French Revolution was brought about and how Paris was LOCKED down and how weapons were confiscated and people imprisoned for cause or killed.
    2. Without Bible Doctrine there is no chance to survive any situation like this revolution in France.
- II. Review X-Y-Z the Doctrine of Inspiration – God Breathed



- A. **God the Holy Spirit so supernaturally directed the authors of scripture that without waiving their human intelligence, individuality, literary style, their personal feelings or any other personal factor his own complete and coherent message to man is recorded in perfect accuracy in the original languages of scripture the very words bearing the authority of DIVINE authorship.**

III. Profitable, beneficial, advantageous Bible Doctrine:

- A. The source book for all messages of the Pastor Teacher must be the Scripture the Word of God in the original languages.
1. It must be presented Line upon line and precept upon Precept.
- B. This doctrine will therefore be BENEFICIAL doctrine for many things including:
1. Learning the Easy Way, and it is better to be reprov'd and convicted by the scripture communicated by the Pastor Teacher than by God himself.
    - i. The Pastor Teacher therefore in essence stands between the congregation and Divine Discipline IF they listen to the messages of the Pastor Teacher.
    - ii. If they listen to the messages of the Pastor Teacher they will AVOID much Divine Discipline but if they reject the messages or authority or any other pastoral communication issue with regard to the Pastor Teacher they will then learn the hard way under Divine Discipline.
    - iii. We can learn by the word of God in doctrinal teaching or by Divine Discipline
      - a. Divine Discipline learning is the HARD Way.
      - b. It is necessary for rebound recovery for the believer to KNOW what sin and failure is in order to know when and what to rebound.
  2. It is also beneficial for "restoration" or to get straightened out again from reversionism and the influence of evil.
    - i. Reproof of Bible Doctrine is for carnality while restoration is recovery from reversionism.
    - ii. Reversionism is the greatest danger and it is satanic trap and the way the believers become servants of Satan.
    - iii. Carnality is recoverable in an instant of time while reversionism takes a minimum of 2 years of Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization and Application of Bible Doctrine.
    - iv. All cases of reversionism involved carnality as well but they are separated here and other passages as well.
    - v. Recovery from carnality is easy as a result of the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ on the cross.
    - vi. Reversionism is much more difficult to recovery from since EVIL infiltrates the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and replaces the Metabolized Bible Doctrine once there and to recover you have to reverse this process and reinstate the Bible Doctrine into the soul.
    - vii. Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil was not part of the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ on the cross.
    - viii. Good and Evil could not be judged in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ on the cross since they must continue to the end of the Angelic Conflict being the policy of Satan whereby man must decide between GRACE and Good and Evil.
    - ix. The unbeliever must choose between Good and Evil and the Grace of the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ on the cross.
    - x. The believer must choose between the Grace of the Plan of God for their life and the Good and Evil of reversionism.
    - xi. The believer who refuses to recovery from reversionism will eventually be taken home to God under the Sin Unto Death.
  3. It is beneficial also for Instruction or Training.

- i. This training is in the field of fulfillment of divine objectives which reflects glory to the person of God.
- ii. The Righteousness of God was satisfied by the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ on the cross.
- iii. The Righteousness of God is kept intact by the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ on the cross.
- iv. The Righteousness of God MUST be glorified and this glorification must be reflected and is in the believer who reaches Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.

C. Summary:

1. The benefits progress as:
  - i. Learning Bible Doctrine in order to grow and reach the objectives of the Plan of God for Phase II TIME.
  - ii. The believer must be under Filling of God the Holy Spirit and therefore must have the doctrines needed to understand carnality and know what and when to rebound.
    - a. This means that the Filling of God the Holy Spirit is essential for concentration to exist in the believer taking in Bible Doctrine.
    - b. Therefore Bible Doctrine is beneficial for conviction of sins in order that the believer can recover from carnality and then function under the Filling of God the Holy Spirit and Grace Apparatus for Perception.
  - iii. It is beneficial for recovery from reversionism
  - iv. It is beneficial for the believer who reaches Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace to be trained in the sphere of righteous objectives in the Plan of God which are the things reflecting the Righteousness of God.
2. Consequently the believer who fails to learn Bible Doctrine and use it for maximum benefits is ON THE WRONG SIDE OF HISTORY.
3. Those on the wrong side of history **1Tim 3:2**
4. For the believer to be on the wrong side of history means reversionism and terrible Divine Discipline from God.
5. For the believer to be on the wrong side of history means for him to be under the influence of evil which is destructive to the soul and serving Satan which is worse than demon possession.
  - i. Once you are under the influence of evil you become a casualty in the Angelic Conflict.
  - ii. You were born again for GREATER things than this and actually for completing the divine objectives which glorify God forever.
  - iii. You are born again to fulfill the tactical victory of the Angelic Conflict.
  - iv. Failure to do these things can be attributed directly to reversionism.
  - v. Carnality is not the true issue in failure in the Spiritual Life, REVERSIONISM is.
6. To neglect or ignore Bible Doctrine means the Royal Family of God will be serving Satan and missing the fantastic blessings of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace blessings and also surpassing grace blessing and reward in eternity.
  - i. NO believer can afford to be on the wrong side of history therefore no believer can afford to neglect or reject Bible Doctrine.

IV. The solution to being on the wrong side of history in reversionism.

- A. It is reasonable for the believer to be on the right side of history and be a proper interpreter of contemporary history.
  1. No one ever reaches Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace without becoming an interpreter of contemporary history and therefore fortified against the danger of being on the wrong side of history and reacting to historical disaster.

2. The believers in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ are NOT perfect not even the believer who has reached Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace.
  - i. See David in carnality still being in Super Grace Status Quo.
3. The canon of scripture is the result of inspiration from God the Holy Spirit to the writers in order that the believer in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ might be able to meet all demands in life being proficient, mature having reached Super Grace or Ultra Super Grace.
4. Proficiency begins at Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and is essential for the Royal Family of God to be on the right side of history.
5. You cannot be on the right side of Human History until you reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace.
6. Upon reaching Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace production in the Spiritual Life will FALL INTO YOUR LAP.

V. Doctrine of Divine Good:

A. Definition:

1. Divine Good is the production of the believer in or moving toward Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.
2. Being oriented to grace production is the natural result and follow through of spiritual growth.
3. The most effective production is by the one who is most advanced in the Spiritual Life.
4. Production of this good has its source from God.

B. There are 3 types of good in Human History:

1. Human Good which is the production and application of the policy and genius of Satan, EVIL, to Human History.
2. Moral Good which is the observance of the Laws of Divine Establishment the cloak which wraps up freedom.
3. Divine Good which is the production of the believer in or moving toward Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace.

C. The sources of Divine Good:

1. Production of the balance of residence in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul between the Filling of God the Holy Spirit and maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
2. Therefore there are 4 sources to be noted:
  - i. Filling of God the Holy Spirit so that when God the Holy Spirit controls the soul there is production.
    - a. The first production is Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization and Application of Bible Doctrine.
    - b. The ability through God the Holy Spirit to recognize the authority of your right Pastor Teacher and recognizing his authority to move into both academic and self discipline and concentration to enable learning Bible Doctrine.
    - c. This also moves into other areas such as thoughtfulness for others.
    - d. The production is the intake of Bible Doctrine until you have enough for output.
  - ii. Metabolized Bible Doctrine resident in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul from the persistent function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception.
    - a. This results in God the Holy Spirit being able to produce a more tangible production OUTSIDE the local church.
    - b. Witnessing, Prayer, helping others, etc., all to glorify God.
  - iii. Super Grace Status Quo in which the dynamics of Divine Good are manifest in production.

- iv. Ultra Super Grace Status Quo where every function in life is the production of Divine Good in the midst of maximum pressure and suffering in life and also historical disaster.
- D. The believer in time was designed to produce Divine Good. **Eph 2:10**
  - 1. Review the origin of life and Neshemah and regeneration being born again and the inhale and exhale analogy.
  - 2. The exhale of the Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul in the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God is Divine Good.
- E. Therefore the production of Divine Good must be related to living or Logistical Grace **2Cor 9:8**
  - 1. After Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God God is required to keep us alive in this life in order that we might GROW in the Spiritual Life and he provides all that is needed for this to occur, this is Living or Logistical Grace.
  - 2. Therefore the production of Divine Good is the end result of Living or Logistical Grace which is Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.
- F. Therefore the production of Divine Good is related to the function of the Grace Apparatus for Perception **Tit 2:7, Col 1:9-10**
  - 1. Spiritual growth is obviously from these passages NOT related to WHAT YOU DO but is related to WHAT YOU KNOW.
    - i. It is the transfer of Bible Doctrine from the pages of the canon of scripture to your own Stream of Consciousness of the Soul by the communication of your Pastor Teacher.
  - 2. Without the Filling of God the Holy Spirit being expressed through Bible Doctrine there can be NO production in the Spiritual Life.
  - 3. You must have spiritual understanding before you can glorify and please God.
  - 4. Every good work of Divine Good produced comes from spiritual understanding.
- G. Therefore the production of Divine Good is related to the Status Quo of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace or Ultra Super Grace. **2Tim3:16-17**
- H. Production of Divine Good is an issue in the Angelic Conflict **Rom 12:21**
  - 1. Evil is the sum total expression of the genius of Satan and his policy of ruling the world.
- I. Therefore the production of Divine Good is related to the Status Quo of the believer in Surpassing Grace, **2Cor 5:10**
  - 1. We will all appear before the Judgment Seat of Jesus Christ for things done in the body in time as Divine Good vs Human Good.
- J. Production of Divine Good is related to the HONOR of the believer **2Tim 2:21**
- K. V16-17 is HOW to get on the RIGHT side of History and the results of being on the right side of history.
  - 1. The absolute source is Bible Doctrine and it MUST be transferred into the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul of the believer by Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization under the Filling of God the Holy Spirit and Grace Apparatus for Perception.

**2Tim 3:16**

**v16: All of the entire canon of Scripture, both Old Testament Scripture and New Testament Scripture, is God Breathed (lgr) Theopneustos), and becomes useful, profitable, advantageous, beneficial, for teaching Bible Doctrine, for conviction, rebuke or reproof for carnality, for Correction or restoration from reversionism, for training or instruction which is for righteousness or the fulfillment of objectives of divine statutes advancing the believer in the Spiritual Life.**

**2Tim 3:17**

**v17: in order that the man (Church Age Believer Royal Family of God) of the God (Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ) might be able to meet all demands, being suitable, proficient, mature, adapted to maturity, skilled as an expert in Bible Doctrine, thoroughly furnished, having been well prepared having reached Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace, for every good of intrinsic value production.**

**Lesson #87      Series # 469      2Tim 3:16**

I. The Wrong Side of History Continued:

- A. The believers relationship with God determines his capacity for life in all categories.
- B. This subject emphasizes the importance of consistent Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine in order to enable the believer to properly interpret contemporary history and avoid reacting to historical disaster.
  - 1. Example: 1850, Ottawa Il., Daughter of T. Lyle Dickey, Margaret Ann Dickey.
    - i. T. Lyle an famous lawyer started to go into practice with Abraham Lincoln but instead found a better situation.
  - 2. She met William H. R. Wallace on Leave at her fathers firm having returned from the Mexican War where he was a Veteran 1<sup>st</sup> Lt of the 1<sup>st</sup> Il Volunteers.
  - 3. They were married she being 18 he being 26 years old and ran the household on her own and was a fantastic woman.
  - 4. At 29 he was a very successful Il Lawyer and they had fantastic happiness in their marriage.
  - 5. As they developed their family the War Between the States then came along and Will Wallace was appointed a Col of the 11<sup>th</sup> Il Infantry and left behind a very lucrative law practice and a very loving wife.
  - 6. At the same time his Father in Law went off as a Col in the Calvary.
  - 7. Cyrus was her elder brother who enlisted and under Will became his Adjutant and her other brother joined the Calvary under her Father.
  - 8. The family was therefore split between these 2 regiments and commanders.
  - 9. The separation was difficult for Ann she having been ILL the year before and his being away was very hard on her.
  - 10. Will Wallace became an extremely GREAT General officer and in 1862 at the battles of Ft Henry and Donaldson he was an outstanding general officer and saved the situation for the Northern army at one point and promoted to Brigadier General.
  - 11. In the letters to his wife he began to demonstrate the Bible Doctrine he had in his soul he being a believer as was his wife.
  - 12. He wrote to her saying that they lacked a Head and that there was nothing wrong with the army but there was NO ONE to drive it.
  - 13. At Pittsburg Landing when the battle there was about to be fought Wallace had only a Brigade in the division but his commander, General C. F. Smith hurt himself and it got infected and Wallace took his place as commander.
  - 14. He wrote another letter and indicated a Foreboding that he was about to depart from this life "I fell that I am in the hands of a kind and overruling gracious heavenly father who will only have the best for me. I am ready for the worst and suspect it is going to come." Indicating he was resigned to do the will of the Lord not matter the result. "If I fall it is glory enough to die in such a cause".
  - 15. His wife was so alarmed and decided to visit her husband in the bivouac wherever they were located and a family friend a Chaplin in Grant's Army named Button and he was on Route back to her husbands division so she was able to get down to Cairo Il on a river boat the Mini Haha and met him.
  - 16. Chaplin Butler was with her and they arrived in 6 April and Ann was dressing in her best to go see her husband in all her finery and Cpt. James Coates returning from leave said he would go find him first and then she could come along.
  - 17. This was the day of the Battle of Shiloh at Pittsburg landing broke out and one of the great heroes of the battle was her husband and she did not get to see him but he brought up his division in time to block the confederate attack and Bragg confounded the confederate situation by a lot of little attacks instead of one real strong attack an none of them were flanking attacks.
  - 18. By 4:00 in the afternoon a subordinate of Bragg, Brigadier Dan Ruggles gathered all the artillery he could find and began to rip up the federal position and there was as a result a

federal retreat and one of the last people to leave was General Wallace and he was moving along with his brother in law and he stood up in his stirrups to look and was hit in the head with a ball shot and his brother in law decided he was dead his face a mass of blood and brain hanging out, etc.

19. The brother in law when he came back to the boat to his shock he met with his sister and told her that Wallace her husband was dead.
20. The Chaplin was not satisfied with this and during the counter attack went back and found his body and he was still breathing so they brought him aboard the MiniHaHA which had become a hospital ship and Ann was working in shock to help the wounded soldiers brought aboard.
21. When they brought in her husband Grant was very impressed with what he had done that day and ordered him to be brought to his Savannah HQ and the last moments of his life were interesting.
22. He had recovered consciousness and he and his wife spent 3 wonderful days together and he talked about how wonderful the Lord was allowing him to see her again and she realized he was going to die.
23. The Chaplin described what occurred "By the 10<sup>th</sup> of April the fever came suddenly and he suffered for 2-3 hours being delirious and consciousness returned but his pulse weakened and he knew that his last moments were few and not being able to see he would run his fingers over her hand and feel her wedding ring on her hand and when he knew he was in his last moments of life he drew himself up and threw his head onto his wife's breast and said "We meet again in Heaven" and he died.
24. In 1868 when her father returned from the war and a great attorney he became President Grant's assistant Attorney General and she went to Washington and told Grant and Sherman and others the story and went all around the world witnessing never having married again and in 1889 on April 17<sup>th</sup> she died of a stroke.
25. She had told her one daughter that there was one dress she had never worn and it was a beautiful Black Silk Dress she stored it for 27 years waiting for Will to come home and her last instructions were to be dressed in that when she was buried because she was going to heaven to meet Will again.
26. The famous last words of these people became a standard for famous last words and people began to search in history for Famous Last Words and some military men came up with some things.
  - i. Julius Caesar said "Kai Su Teknon" == "And You Son" and when he saw his bastard son Brutus stabbing him that is when he stopped resisting and died.
  - ii. Nathan Hale said "I regret that I only have 1 life to give for my country"
  - iii. Jackson said "My wish is fulfilled I always wanted to die on Sunday" and gave orders to Hill to come up with the infantry "Let us cross over the river and rest under the shade of the trees".
  - iv. Gen H. R. Wallace after Shiloh said "darling we meet in heaven".
  - v. Lee said "tell hill to bring up the infantry" and said "Strike the Tent and Died".
  - vi. Napoleon as an unbeliever Said "I shall meet my brave warriors on the Allesian fields"
  - vii. Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ the greatest of all said "It is finished, Into your hands I deposit my spirit for you have delivered me Oh Jehovah, God of Doctrine."

## II. In 2<sup>nd</sup> Timothy chapter 4 we have FAMOUS LAST WORDS.

- A. There are 4 of the greatest men in history mentioned many times before, Moses, Paul, Caesar, Napoleon.
  1. 2 are unbelievers 2 are Ultra Super Grace believers.
  2. Moses and Paul were permitted by God to give an extensive dying message.

3. Moses' dying message covers 4 chapters of the bible Deut 31-34
4. Paul's Dying words cover 1 chapter in the New Testament Scripture 2Tim 4
5. These are the dying deposition of an Ultra Super Grace believer, Paul

B. Outline:

1. Last words of exhortation v1-5
2. Last words of anticipation v6-8
3. Last words of explanation v9-22

III. The Last words of Exhortation.

A. This is one of the most historic moments of all of the Church Age.

1. We hope that there is historical interest in the Unites States of America
2. Any Super Grace or beyond believer will have a great interest in history past and contemporary and this passage is one of the MOST significant moments in the history of the Church Age.

B. The Changing of the Guard or Transfer of the Colors or transfer of leadership of the ancient churches.

1. This is one of the greatest of all historical moments occurring in AD68 with the Apostle Paul writing to the Pastor Teacher Timothy.
2. Apostles were the leaders of the Church in the precanon period of the Church Age and here we have the changing of the leadership from Apostles to Pastor Teachers as communicators of Bible Doctrine in order that believers might be on the right side of history.
3. The most beautiful changing of the guard has been in the British Military at Buckingham Palace and Edinburgh Castle and others with fantastic ceremony and how it is conducted and beautiful uniforms etc.
4. The Roman army used a ceremony also and Paul recognized it and used it.

C. Although some of the apostles lived after Paul died he is recognizing this as a historic occasion and in dying grace Paul the greatest of the apostles had the privilege of handing the colors or leadership of the church over to Timothy and telling him to carry on.

1. In any changing of the guard after the exchange of orders and anything regarding the posting of sentries he finally gives the command "Carry On" and then the old guard marches off and the new guard assumes his post.
2. Often they also pass the colors from one group of company or battalion or brigade to another.
3. Paul is at this time turning over the function of communication of Bible Doctrine to Pastor Teachers.
4. Up to this time the Apostles were the major communicators of Bible Doctrine and though there were Pastor Teachers they were not the major communicators of Bible Doctrine.
5. Anticipating the completion of the Canon and the death of John in AD96 the changing of the leadership of the church occurs at this time in the dying days of the greatest of the apostles, Paul.
6. Timothy will receive the leadership and command for all Pastor Teachers of the Church Age.
7. As of this moment and until the end of the Church Age the responsibility for communication of Bible Doctrine and for spiritual growth LIES WITH THE Pastor Teacher.

D. (gr) Diamartouromai ==

1. [civilian] to put one under oath and if they lie they are to be executed or destroyed in some way being under a curse for violation of the oath.
2. [Military] a solemn command issued in the changing of the guard or transfer of the colors and this is how it used here.

- E. Paul is here commanding Timothy to continue advance to Ultra Super Grace and Paul is transferring the leadership of communication of Bible Doctrine to Timothy.
1. This is a very strong message to members of the Royal Family of God and WE as believers will never grow in the Spiritual Life at all without taking in Bible Doctrine from a communicator of Bible Doctrine the Pastor Teacher.
  2. This communicator MUST be an AUTHORIZED communicator such authorization occurring at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God when God the Holy Spirit sovereignly bestows the spiritual gift.
  3. To Paul the spiritual gift of Apostle, to Timothy the spiritual gift of Pastor Teacher.
  4. This means that apart from your right Pastor Teacher you cannot grow in the Spiritual Life in any other way.
  5. The only means of spiritual growth for any believer in all of the Church Age is by being under an authorized communicator of Bible Doctrine the Pastor Teacher for consistent Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine.
  6. From the time of this writing down to this very moment ONLY a Pastor Teacher communicating to a local church congregation is the ONLY way for spiritual growth in the Church Age.
  7. There are many ways for evangelization to occur but there is NO way to have spiritual growth apart from the ministry of the Pastor Teacher in the local church.
  8. There is no individual work or production which will bring spiritual growth nor is the Filling of God the Holy Spirit the means of spiritual growth.
  9. The Filling of God the Holy Spirit is the mechanical basis for the function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception and NO ONE ever grows in the Spiritual Life apart from Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
  10. The Canon of scripture is the THINKING of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ the Policy and Plan of God for mankind and this must be transferred to the soul and thinking of the believer and the only one in the Church Age after the death of Paul which can take this information from the Canon and provide it for the believer to assimilate into his soul is the Pastor Teacher.
  11. When Timothy accepted the command to carry on and lead the church in communication of Bible Doctrine he accepted it for himself and for all Pastor Teachers in the Church Age all the way down to the rapture of the church.
  12. Understanding this we then can see that fundamentalism in Christianity and even “religious” Christianity of the protestants, Methodists, Catholics, baptists, ETC., are saturated with every kind of gimmick and Human Viewpoint and works systems.
  13. The people in these congregations think that when they receive recognition for the works they perform that this means they are growing in the Spiritual Life and have greater or intensified spirituality.
  14. The only means of spiritual growth is NOT through independent spiritual functions or works but ONLY through the ministry of teaching of Bible Doctrine by the Pastor Teacher.
- F. This anticipates that the Canon of Scripture will be completed and after this occurs God will not speak to any person on the earth and the only communication of the thinking, plan and policy of God is through the Pastor Teacher.
1. In all of the Church Age the only way anyone has or will grow in the Spiritual Life is to get under their right Pastor Teacher and learn Bible Doctrine.
  2. In fact the Pastor Teacher when he starts must get under a Pastor Teacher in order to begin his preparation for his own ministry by accumulating Bible Doctrine in his Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and at some stage of his spiritual growth he becomes aware that he has the gift of Pastor Teacher.



3. Upon recognition of this gift means he most likely will go somewhere else for continued preparation and that at some time in his spiritual growth he will go directly to the canon of scripture and receive Bible Doctrine which causes him to grow.
  4. In personal study only the Pastor Teacher can take Bible Doctrine from the original language of the bible and grow and everyone else must get their doctrine from the Pastor Teacher.
  5. **2Tim 4:1** is where this all started.
  6. There is no such thing as a biblically recognized “friendly” local church because the local church should be a place where your privacy is recognized and respected and where you can go to get Bible Doctrine without interference with YOUR personal business.
  7. No believer can bypass the disciplinary system and the principle of AUTHORITY in the teaching of Bible Doctrine and attempt to extract doctrinal principles from the bible personally.
  8. *GOD never gives anything to any believer apart from AUTHORITY and no believer ever gets anything from God apart from Self Discipline and this is the principle of volition in the resolution of the Angelic Conflict related to spiritual growth.*
  9. (ff) We must constantly choose for the Grace Plan of God vs the Evil Plan of Satan and our spiritual growth after Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God, the initial choice for the Plan of God, requires constant and consistent choices using our volition to get under the authority of our right Pastor Teacher and use our own personal self discipline to maximize the amount of Metabolized Bible Doctrine in our Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and avoid the influence of evil from this world.
  10. God has set up the authority and all spiritual growth in the Spiritual Life is related to authority.
  11. God has set up a system of discipline whereby your volition under the principle of self discipline is involved in spiritual growth just as it is involved in the resolution of the Angelic Conflict.
  12. GOD in his GRACE does not bypass your volition since free will is the cause of and the solution to the Angelic Conflict.
- G. Paul is released from leadership of the church and Timothy the next Ultra Super Grace Pastor Teacher for the next generation is taking over.
1. Paul as an Ultra Super Grace believer had been a stabilizing rod for his generation and for all subsequent history.
  2. This is therefore changing of leadership in the church age from Apostleship to Pastorship.
  3. From this time in AD68 right down to this lesson 1976 and to today 2019 the only way for spiritual growth occurs under the principles of the Angelic Conflict is through Pastor Teachers.
  4. In the Old Testament Scripture prophets were communicators of Bible Doctrine but in the Church Age we have a right Pastor Teacher and are stuck with him and this is where we must FACE divine delegated authority standing at a pulpit and the issue of Self Discipline on a consistent basis daily.
  5. This is where we face the problems of personality conflict, hypersensitivity, subjectivity and any other thing which keeps us from focusing attention on the word of God.
- H. God is not opposed to improper language to communicate his thinking to improper people, US.
- I. No man with the gift of Pastor Teacher is qualified to extract doctrinal principles from the bible unless he knows the original languages.
- J. Principles:
1. This verse sets up the occasion, the changing of leadership of the Church Age from one generation to another but also historically from one type of communicator to another.
  2. This is the passing of the leadership from the communicator the Apostles to another communicator type the Pastor Teachers.

3. In this verse Paul with his highest authority as communicator recognizes the mutual commander and chief of all communicators whether apostles or pastors that being Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
4. Paul implies also the passing of the colors from an Ultra Super Grace believer to one who is expected to shortly reach Ultra Super Grace as well.
5. The implications of future evaluation of both Paul and Timothy are extremely important and no member of the Royal Family of God should ever OVERLOOK that future evaluation resulting in an ETERNAL Efficiency Report.
  - i. If you pass this Efficiency Evaluation you wear the honor and reward of it for all eternity.
  - ii. If you don't pass you are without the honor or reward.
  - iii. The believer who gets the higher decorations for eternity will wear them and by so doing glorify Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ for all eternity.
  - iv. If you fail to pass the OER at the Judgment Seat of Jesus Christ then you will have your Resurrection Body for all eternity minus the Old Sin Nature and minus Human Good with nothing else to show for your life as a believer in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ, and nothing to glorify Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
  - v. There will be an unimaginable difference between the believer with maximum rewards and one with nothing.
6. The implication is obvious and it is what we do now that will or not glorify God forever.
  - i. This is referring NOT to our efforts, production or works but our function in the Spiritual Life consistently under the Filling of God the Holy Spirit and Grace Apparatus for Perception.
  - ii. Both the Super Grace and Ultra Super Grace Status Quo have great blessing in life, greater blessing in death and even greater blessing for all eternity.
  - iii. You can lose the great blessing in time, the greater blessing of dying and the greatest blessing for eternity simply by your failure with regard to Bible Doctrine.
  - iv. Your simple neglect of Bible Doctrine will cancel all of the wonderful things you think will bring you spiritual growth and spiritual advance by your own efforts, abilities, and production.
  - v. In the Spiritual Life of the Church Age you can do do do do and it will be worth only DOODOO since spiritual growth only occurs from the consistent Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine.

#### IV. Doctrine of Terminal Judgments:

- A. This is the time coming when each of us will be evaluated.
- B. There is a judgment terminating spiritual death and which refers to the judgment of the Cross.
 

**1Pet 2:24, 2Cor 5:21**

  1. The emergence of the fetus from the mother at Birth and when God gives to it Neshemah, the spark of life it then becomes a human being.
  2. God can only give it physical human life since this fetus has an Old Sin Nature and as the spark of life is imputed the responsibility for Adam's Original Sin is also imputed resulting in spiritual death.
  3. This is the condition of this individual until and unless another birth occurs after the "pregnancy" of Evangelism or Gospel Hearing.
  4. When there is the expression of faith alone in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ alone this is the new spiritual BIRTH and this is the moment of the receipt of Eternal Life and a New Human Spirit giving us also Spiritual Life.
  5. This is the result of Common and Efficacious Grace combined with Positive Volition toward the doctrine of the gospel of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
  6. Therefore the Judgment of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ in Substitutionary Spiritual Death for all sins is the judgment for terminating our spiritual death.

7. The cross is the reason for this terminating judgment is that on the cross, since the Old Sin Nature and Adam's Original Sin which makes us spiritually dead and has an area of weakness which produces all of our personal sins, the sins of all humanity were judged in substitution in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
  8. This is where spiritual death is terminated for anyone who will come to the cross and express his personal faith alone in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ alone.
  9. At the Cross ONLY HUMAN PERSONAL SIN is judged in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and paid for since Human Personal Sin is not an issue in the Angelic Conflict ONLY a choice between the GRACE Plan of God and the EVIL Plan of Satan.
- C. The Judgment terminating Temporal Death which is referring to Rebound Procedure **1Cor 11:28-32, 1Pet 4:17, 1John 1:9**.
1. When we as believer sin again we leave fellowship with God and the Filling of God the Holy Spirit and enter a state of carnality.
  2. We judge that sin in ourselves and since God has already judged all sins, by citing or naming the sin to God then temporal death is thus terminated and we are no longer out of fellowship with God.
- D. The Judgment terminating Human Good which is referring to Judgment Seat of Jesus Christ. **Rom 14:10, 1Cor 3:11-16, 2Cor 5:10, 2Tim 2:12, Heb 6:7-12**
1. At the Judgment Seat of Jesus Christ we as believers will stand before him to be evaluated and at this point ALL of our personal Human Good will be extracted and judged.
  2. At the Judgment Seat of Jesus Christ the area of strength of the Old Sin Nature is judged and all the Human Good and Evil which the believer has been involved in is at this point judged and removed.
  3. Believers who do not grow and all reversionistic believers who neglect, reject or ignore Bible Doctrine accumulate a lot of Human Good as they function under the policy of Evil and try to work their way forward into Spiritual Maturity.
  4. They are trying to accumulate enough human good works to impress God and move forward in a pseudo spiritual life.
  5. This Human Good however is function of the Policy and plan of Satan of EVIL.
  6. Instead of advancing they are regressing during their lifetime in the Angelic Conflict.
  7. One of the most pleasant things about dying and being face to face with the Lord is that there WILL BE NO MORE HUMAN GOOD IN HEAVEN.
  8. There will be rewards for some and nothing for others but all Human Good will be judged.
- E. The Judgment terminating the unbelievers in the tribulation referring to the Baptism of Fire.
1. The tribulation which is the continuation and completion of the Age of Israel will end with the Baptism of Fire where all unbelievers are removed from the earth in order that ONLY believers will start the millennium.
  2. These include both Jewish and Gentile unbelievers terminating in the baptism of fire.
  3. Jewish unbelievers **Ez 20:34-38**, Gentile **Joel 3:11-12, Matt 25:31-46**
- F. The judgment terminating Human Revolution the Great White Throne Judgment **Rev 20:12-15**
1. This is the Gog & Magog revolt termination and after this all HUMAN revolt is ended and all living and dead unbelievers are brought before the Great White Throne Judgment and cast into the Lake of Fire forever.
- G. The Judgment terminating Angelic Revolution referring to the judgment of all Fallen Angels **Matt 25:41, Rev 20:10**
1. When Satan and all fallen angels are cast into the Lake of Fire angelic revolution is ended and this means the beginning of the Eternal State.
- H. There are 6 terminal judgments and each ends something begun by Satan and his plan and policy of evil and all are terminated by God who has not begun any of them.

2Tim 4:1

v1: I adjure, give a solemn command under penalty of courts martial or execution to, charge you, Timothy, under oath, in the presence of The God and of Christ Jesus, who is inevitably destined to judge the dead unbelievers at the Great White Throne Judgment and evaluate the dead and living believers at the Judgment Seat of Jesus Christ, (John 5:22, 27) both with reference to his appearance at the rapture of the church and with reference to his kingdom at the Great White Throne Judgment

**Lesson #88**      **Series # 469**      **2Tim 4:2**

- I. Beach Assault 20 Jan 1944
  - A. Some 1200 Texas Men died in the 36<sup>th</sup> Division 143 Regiment.
  - B. Patton Said of Mark Clark Aug 17<sup>th</sup> Diary entry; “Had a drink with Clark but I do not trust him but he improves on Acquaintance but Ike is getting megalomania.” Sept 28<sup>th</sup> “As far as I am concerned Clark has explained NOTHING and seems to be preoccupied with bettering his own future than winning the war. He seems slightly Ill at Ease.” Dec 1, Algiers, “IKE is sick having a cold but is low and lacks decision, I had to suffer with the sacred family, Ike, Clark, Davis.” (Clark was given the 5<sup>th</sup> army which was a training army but would become a real army.) “The 5<sup>th</sup> Army under Clark makes me mad but there is nothing which can be done about it. Ike and Clark have the inside track, their HQ is a mess and gives out contradictory orders almost daily, some day they will be found out. I don’t think Ike or Clark have any idea what they are going to do next, I should not be surprised to see the British 1<sup>st</sup> Army in Tunisia driven back.” Patton on return to Algiers, “Ike and Clark were in conference as to what to do neither had been to the front and showed their obvious lack of decision. They are on the way out I think and have no knowledge of men or war. They are too damned slick especially that Clark.” Jan 10<sup>th</sup>, “Clark arrived, I met him and I had a guard of honor. Took him on an inspection of all the troops and installations. He was not the least interested. His whole mind was on Clark and went to the house and for 1 hour spend his time cutting Ike’s throat. Ike poor fool sent him here. Clark came so that if as most likely the new attack on Tunisia failed he could crawl out from under and land it on Freedomhall. Kenner and I talked till 1am, he too thinks Ike is not commanding and Clark is an SOB, very discouraging.” Clark was quite cordial and evidently was having trouble with the British who simply don’t fight. Their men are braver than ours but their officers have not push. (Clark’s command post at Caserda was 2.5 hours drive from the division on the line and Patton through that Clark might just as well have been in Naples.) “Truscott (commander of the 3<sup>rd</sup> Division) is fed up with the campaign and with Clark. He is fed up with Clark and his staff because he keeps meddling with him and because he and his men are battle weary and is very anxious to be with me in the next show, the next time I go in. I would like to have him for a Corps commander.”
    1. Clark was junior to Patton graduating 8 years after Patton, in 1941 Patton was a Major General while Clark was a Lt Col.
    2. Clark ended up Senior to Patton and be a full general over the Lt General Patton.
    3. Eisenhower had surpassed Patton as a senior Lt General but was an old friend
    4. Clark was relatively unknown but Patton respected his undoubted ability and envied his close relationship to Eisenhower.
    5. If something happened to Eisenhower, Clark would be senior to Patton and a Lt General as Well.
  - C. Brig General E. D. Smith officer in the Italian campaign 1943-44, (Book) “Battles for Casino”.
    1. Crossing of the Rapido River in Italy the strongest point in the Gustav Line with the 15<sup>th</sup> Panzer Division there to meet them over about ½ mile of flat land before the river and then some hills where they can observe those trying to cross and where the artillery observers can pick their targets easily.
    2. There was not surprise and nothing in favor of the 36<sup>th</sup> Texas at all.

3. Walker decided to begin the crossing at 20:00 and between then and Daylight on 21 Jan he had to get 6 battalions across and break the line.
  4. German Patrols knew they were coming and before the 141<sup>st</sup> and 143<sup>rd</sup> got to their crossing point they went through mine fields which had been cleared but restored by the German patrols and this killed a lot of Texans.
  5. The German Artillery and Tanks and Infantry knew where the crossings would be and despite the fog conditions just kept firing in those areas all night long.
  6. When they got there they found that Clark was not able to give them the proper boats to cross with and some tried in rubber boats and on the other bank 50-75 yards away the Germans had everything imaginable concentrated there and Shot the Hell out of them as they tried to cross.
  7. They took 1200 casualties and the Germans took 200 casualties with About 1/3 American casualties were Texans, 1/3 from New York and 1/3 from Pennsylvania.
  8. The 15<sup>th</sup> Panzers destroyed the 36<sup>th</sup> Division and the 141<sup>st</sup> regiment ceased to exist. Walker said that there was NO JUSTIFIABLE END for this waste.
  9. Walker Wrote on 23 Jan, "I fully expected Clark and Keys to can (relieve) me to cover their own stupidity. They came to my HQ today but were not in a bad mood. Clark admitted that the failure of the 36<sup>th</sup> division to cross the Rapido was as much his fault as anyone else's because he knew how difficult the operation would be. He has now decided to attack over the high ground north of Casino. This is what he should have done in the first place.
- D. Official History, US Army in World War II, "What happened at the Rapido"
1. Clark claimed that he knew this was going to be costly but did it to draw the German reserves away from Anzio.
  2. Crossing the Rapido was on 20 Jan Anzio was on 22 Jan with the 3<sup>rd</sup> Division, 1<sup>st</sup> Armored Division and Special forces.
  3. He claimed that the attack by the Texans was to draw all the German forces away from Anzio.
  4. The problem was that there was no one at Anzio in the first place just a few troops and all the troops at the Rapido were in the hills observing and waiting for an attempted crossing.
- E. Walker asked for and received a typed signed statement from his commanders regarding the nature of the cause of the failure to cross the Rapido and said this, "Clark Said 'tell me what happened here' and the commanders discussed the operation and there was no attempt to blame anyone for the serious losses inflicted on the division. At one point Keys (the corps commander) said 'according to the information available to him before hand the assault crossing seemed to be the most worthwhile effort.' Then said Clark 'It was as much My fault as yours' and he said this in front of the Corps commanders."
1. The historian who wrote the book above said the great losses of these fine young men during the attempted crossing of the Rapido "was to no purpose and in violation of good infantry tactics" wrote Walker later. He was very depressed at the time and charges it all to the stupidity of Higher Command.
  2. Although Clark recalled the decision to cross the Rapido having to do some explaining, and said "the Idea originated with the British general who was in command of the entire area General Alexander. General Keys was under the impression that the crossing of the Rapido was Clark's Decision alone. (This was everyone passing the buck around).
  3. In the process over 1200 men were killed for no reason.
- F. Thomas E. McCall, Staff Sgt, US Army, F Company, 143<sup>rd</sup> Infantry 36<sup>th</sup> division 17 April for action on Jan 20+ at Rapido.
1. For 2 days McCall fought the Germans and on the 2<sup>nd</sup> day on 22 Jan this was the action which occurred.

2. F Company had crossed near San Angelo Italy and Attacked the German positions West of them against a next of Machine Gun positions covering the approach with also mortar and artillery.
  3. The last anyone ever saw of him was advancing while carrying a machine gun after taking out 2 gun emplacements toward a third and his body was never found even to this day.
- G. The 36<sup>th</sup> Division at the end of the war tried to do something about the “history’ of this situation.
1. 19 Jan 1946 at Brownsville the association of the 36<sup>th</sup> division adopted a resolution calling for a congressional investigation into the Rapido River Attack to investigate the fiasco and take the needed steps to correct a military system which will permit an Inefficient and inexperienced general officer such as General Mark Wayne Clark to have a high command in order to destroy the young manhood of this country and prevent future soldiers from being so sacrificed so wastefully and uselessly.
  2. The Texas legislature supported this and the House and Senate of the US government held hearings to determine whether an investigation was warranted regarding this but they were a farce with the single exception of General Walker who stated his position with dignity and the witnesses were ill informed regarding the facts.
  3. This appears to be one of the better cover ups for people like Eisenhower, Clark, Marshall, and several other generals.
  4. Walker and Patton were on the outs about it but there is another historical account of this.
  5. “The Rapido Still flows”, called the biggest disaster to American arms since Pearl Harbor.
- H. This merely demonstrates that War is always an impassioned drama and there is no element more dramatic than those command decisions which mean life and death for better men of courage.
1. At that time apparently NO ONE was able to interpret contemporary events and they were lost in an even greater disaster where Mark Clark backed General Lucas in NOT exploiting the Anzio landings.
  2. When they landed there was NO resistance and when they entered Anzio there was no resistance and they should have been turned loose to go and the 1<sup>st</sup> armored division should have run with the 3<sup>rd</sup> infantry division (possibly the best division of the whole war) behind them, along with Darby’s Rangers and the 1<sup>st</sup> Special Forces, these were the ELITE of the United States army.
  3. Clark told them to HOLD UP he thought there was something wrong and they did and waited and the Germans came up and absolutely annihilated Darby’s Rangers.
  4. They all took an awful beating but they held there and MONTHS passed on this short campaign.
  5. When Clark broke through to Anzio he was told to hold and let the initial assault group move around and trap the German army and then destroy them between the 2 armies.
  6. He disobeyed orders and moved on to Rome and the German army moved ahead of him and escaped and this was considered one of the greatest disasters of the whole war.
  7. The brilliant Luftwaffe Marshal Kessering said, “The worst mistake Clark ever made outside of Anzio was the Rapido River.”
- I. We learn from this that at the time of World War II we had an amazing army which was MASS military of great men.
1. We always have had this problem in war having a GREAT army of MASS military machine, but someone MUST learn to drive the machine.
  2. It was not until Patton emerged that there was a driver for any part of this great machine.
  3. The machine went on to function without good leadership and without being destroyed just as the machine had in the war between the states when the Confederacy defeated the Union army repeatedly for 3 years with the union army only winning the battles of Ft Henry, Ft Donaldson and a very narrow victory at Shiloh.

4. This was the first time in history this Mass Military Machine was seen and how it worked and the 2<sup>nd</sup> time was in World War II where the United States Army was defeated time and again but eventually succeeded.
  5. Clark was Ike's Favorite they were at west point at the same time and Ike met him at Ft Lewis Washington in 1937 when the 3<sup>rd</sup> division was stationed there and they had been buddies all the way. Anytime Ike would move up he would take Clark with him and in fact offered Clark the command given later to Patton after Kasserine Pass but refused it since it would have been a step down.
  6. This was a Clique of officers, Marshal, Eisenhower, Clark, Bradley, and these are the people who could not drive the machine but there were those who could and began to emerge such as General Robert Frederick, George S. Patton, but in the pacific Douglas MacArthur was a GREAT driver from the start and had great success from the start.
- J. We can learn from the 20<sup>th</sup> of Jan Incident at Rapido, that the United States Army in Europe had no Drivers for the machine at the top and they suffered terrible casualties many times but over in the south pacific that great military machine had a great driver in MacArthur and he took them all the way to Tokyo and Victory.
1. In the south pacific they had a great driver, maximum success, minimal casualties, minimal material, logistical problems such as having to cross a 2000 mile TANK ditch to get to Tokyo.
  2. The United States army could not even cross a river 50 yards wide having been committed at the wrong spot at the wrong time.
- K. No organization at any time ever succeeds until and unless it reflects great leadership in the organization and they are good enough to actually lead.
- II. This is the case also with all local churches and until the local church reflects the ministry and leadership of a GREAT pastor it will not move forward though having good components.
- A. In very often never occurs to anyone that the Pastor Teacher is the TEACHER of EVERYTHING and everything which occurs in the local church must reflect the teaching of the Pastor Teacher.
  - B. We can learn from history many things and from the word of God what we can learn from history.
- III. The first command to Carry ON.
- A. It starts with the Pastor Teacher who had all the authority in the local church.
    1. The Pastor Teacher by his teaching of Bible Doctrine sets all policy and pace in the local church.
    2. There can be patience over a period of time but there always comes a time when either the Pastor Teacher must go or those in opposition must go.
    3. There cannot be a coexistence of 2 opposed authorities in the local church.
  - B. All the commands to carry on are related to one organization giving way to another organization, one officer being relieved and replaced by another officer.
    1. The last command of the officer leaving and being Relieved is "Carry On".
  - C. The Pastor Teacher is the herald of the King of Kings and Lord of Lords Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and he must make a public proclamation of the policies of the king.
    1. The King is absent and is represented by his herald.
    2. He gets this information from the Canon of Scripture in the original languages and the plan and policy and everything the King wants the church to know is preserved in this guard book of the Canon of Scripture in Hebrew, Koine Greek and a small bit of Chaldean.
    3. In order to read and understand the Guard Book you must know the Language.
    4. The herald must know the languages otherwise if he depends on a translation he cannot be sure of accuracy.

5. Most inaccuracies regarding the policy and plan of the king come from translations NOT INSPIRED in their writing.
  6. The original languages of scripture were God Breathed or INSPIRED but translations are not inspired.
  7. The HERALD MUST be able to open the canon of scripture and read it and understand it in its original languages.
  8. The one who is qualified to teach MUST be a Pastor Teacher and the preparation of a Pastor Teacher MUST include the original language.
  9. To analyze an English translation of the scripture can be NO better than the translation and if the translation is weak the analysis is WRONG.
  10. The Pastor Teacher is the communicator of the thoughts of the King of Kings derived from the canon of scripture.
  11. Once he has determined the accurate thinking of the King of Kings he must then take this to the Royal Family of God in his congregation under the authority from the canon and present this information for their spiritual growth.
  12. Having absolute authority from his knowledge of the doctrines from the canon NO pastor should ever tolerate certain things in the congregation which cause any controversy over the content being taught and they MUST be stopped.
  13. There must be in the congregational gathering for the teaching of Bible Doctrine there MUST be strict academic discipline and concentration on the message being presented.
  14. This self discipline requires on the part of the congregation hearing the proclamation from the Herald, Good Manners, Poise, Objectivity and Concentration.
  15. This is essential for the Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine and is part of the ministry of God the Holy Spirit.
  16. Therefore this is simply the announcement of the plan and policy of the King of Kings by the Herald the Pastor Teacher.
  17. The Pastor Teacher is to be associated with a local church and his primary function is to go daily to the canon of scripture to draw out information to be presented as the thinking of the King of Kings to the congregation of the Royal Family of God.
- D. This is the first command given by the dying apostle Paul to the Pastor Teacher Timothy and all subsequent Pastor Teachers in the Church Age.
1. Every generation of Pastor Teachers MUST carry on in this fashion by studying and teaching constantly.
  2. If these pastors do not carry on in this fashion then there will be disasters in the Spiritual Life like the Rapido River or Anzio Beach in World War II.
  3. The failure of believers to make advancement in the Spiritual Life and reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and then carry on.
- E. There are many dangers every time a local church sets up any system whereby someone else is going to be teaching or communicating and although this MUST be done for many reasons there are dangers in the system.
1. The greatest danger is the Arrogance of those who will be doing the teaching to others along with they being NON responsive to the teaching from the Pastor Teacher or just being unteachable with regard to improving their teaching method or content.
- F. Christianity is not that we all love God and God loves all of us the we must love all of each other.
1. The commands to love are many but the ability to execute these commands depends on Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
  2. God does love us but he is perfect while we are all imperfect and our LOVE is imperfect as well and we do not and cannot apart from Metabolized Bible Doctrine in our Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.



3. Bible Doctrine in our Stream of Consciousness of the Soul comes from a communicator here called a herald which we know as the Pastor Teacher and his job is to TEACH doctrine which he has extracted from the original languages of the canon of scripture
4. As the Pastor Teacher communicates what is in the canon to the Royal Family of God they develop the ability to LOVE God and each other and fulfill all functions of LOVE in all 3 categories.
5. Without Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul this cannot be accomplished.
6. The most basic system in all of Christianity upon which all else pivots is found in this First Carry On Command from Paul, to Timothy who represents at this point all Pastor Teachers of the entire Church Age.
7. This is a command to have a lifetime of studying and teaching the public proclamation of Bible Doctrine.
8. From this command everything which is worthwhile in the Church Age must inevitably extend.
9. Everything confusing and consisting of Human Good and related to reversionism and evil as the great genius of Satan as a counter attacker come from Satan as a result of failure of the Pastor Teacher in this first carry on command.
10. The Pastor Teacher here is told to have a total familiarization with the plan and policy of the King of Kings and then an ELOQUENT communication of this information to a group under strict academic discipline.

G. The orders all put together:

1. (gr) Logos == the word, all thinking in the Human Race is accomplished by the use of words and no one can think or express thoughts without words put into order in sentences and paragraphs so that concepts are developed.
2. This WORD is not dealing with OUR thinking but with God's Thinking which is infinitely superior the human thinking.
3. Therefore there is an incredible problem of communication of the thinking of GOD.
4. The communication of his thinking seems impossible but is not since God found languages by which everything which God wanted us to know about his plan, policy, salvation the Angelic Conflict and our purpose here is all here in beautiful order.
5. Words are the basis for thinking and No person can think, do or function in any way and the KEY to life is found in your soul and the key to your soul are the words which go through your soul.
6. There are human words which express human and satanic ideas since he rules the world where these words reside.
7. There are also DIVINE words put into one book by God preserved by God for the purpose of their meaning being extracted by qualified Heralds of the King of Kings.
8. To be qualified to do this requires the spiritual gift of Pastor Teacher which demands training and development and when this is completed that Pastor Teacher is qualified to go into the original languages of scripture and analyze the meanings and relationships there and transmit these to the Royal Family of God in their language.
9. Apart from this spiritual gift is CANNOT be done and it was not designed to be done any other way and there is nothing which allows the bypassing of the authority of God's herald.

H. There is no special reason that certain men are given the spiritual gift of Pastor Teacher they being nicer or smarter or better looking or more appealing.

1. On the contrary this spiritual gift is given to a great variety of men with different personalities and abilities and backgrounds.

2. This as with all other spiritual gifts is given at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God where the new believer has done nothing and his background prior to Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God is of no value whatsoever.
  3. God does not give this gift on the basis of background but only on the basis of what is going to happen in the future and what the needs will be for that generation by way of Positive Volition etc.
  4. The most important thing to any Pastor Teacher (Phil 4:1) and his greatest happiness is his congregation which has Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine.
  5. Therefore the Pastor Teacher and his priorities of happiness are vastly different that the priorities of happiness for all other people.
  6. It is OUR Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine and our spiritual growth are the source of the happiness of our Pastor Teacher.
  7. The Pastor Teacher has to keep advancing all of his life and must say to his congregation FOLLOW ME and his teaching should keep his congregation HOT on his HEELS in spiritual progress and this is the purpose and importance of teaching.
  8. We must hear and take the Bible Doctrine and transfer it to our own soul and get the policy and the basis for our spiritual growth and WHEN we grow up and reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God we will be a producer.
  9. You don't grow up by working but by consistent Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine and WORKS or PRODUCTION of Divine Good is a result of growth and never a means of anything.
  10. Production is a dynamic impact result of the spiritual growth of the believer not vice versa.
  11. Without this consistent function there are disasters in the Spiritual Life of any congregation.
- I. Reversionion makes casualties out of believers and the only way to avoid this is for the herald to teach and use his authority in the local church in many factors.
1. The Herald is the representative of the King and has the authority to speak for the king who is absent and also carries incredible power delegated by the king.
  2. The obvious delegation principle is that if he abuses this power he gets double discipline
  3. If the Pastor Teacher uses this authority properly he gets double blessing.
  4. There are 2 abuses of the authority of the Pastor Teacher:
    - i. Bullying
    - ii. Not using it at all.
  5. Many pastors destroy the local church by not asserting their authority properly while others by bullying the believers in the congregation.
  6. The authority MUST be used in between these 2 extremes.
- J. Ladies being responders cannot open the original canon of scripture and extract doctrine and policy and growth.
1. Bible Doctrine is our means of spiritual growth and also our policy both our Modus Vivendi and Modus Operandi.
  2. A responder so responds to what is in the scripture that it cannot be properly communicated.
  3. The ladies do not and will never have the spiritual gift of Pastor Teacher but this does not mean they cannot teach.
  4. The Ladies must be taught to teach by someone with greater authority since they are responders.
  5. Doctrine must be taught at every level in any preschool of any local church.
  6. There must be techniques of reducing Bible Doctrine to the level of understanding of the child.
- K. Principle:

1. The apostles are departing from life and when John dies in AD96 the last of the apostles are gone and that stage of heralds is GONE.
2. The old guard has been removed from history to be replaced by the young guard of generation after generation of men with the spiritual gift of Pastor Teacher standing before congregations delineating the policy of the King of Kings.
3. These heralds MUST reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and go on to Ultra Super Grace because as leaders if they cannot reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God by STUDY then their congregations cannot reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God by LISTENING.
  - i. The Pastor Teacher who does not break into Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God then the congregation listening to you cannot break through.
  - ii. NO CONGREGATION CAN ADVANCE BEYOND THE SPIRITUAL GROWTH LEVEL OF THEIR PASTOR TEACHER.
4. The Pastor Teacher must LEAD his congregation to the objectives of tactical victory in the Angelic Conflict therefore he must have achieved them himself.
  - i. He does not, however, lead by taking them by the hand and drawing them in some direction but by Studying and Teaching.
5. Every generation of history MUST have a remnant of Super Grace and Ultra Super Grace believers to carry their generation as spiritual atlas'
  - i. Think! What if the TRAVESTY of 20 Jan 1944 had occurred on 20 Jan 1976 or even 2019 and those 300 who got across and died were all from Berachah church which would mean that wives, children, loved ones and all kinds of other people would be staring into the face of a historical disaster.
  - ii. It should occur immediately that these 300 who died would have gone in their right time with great honor and that God always knows what he is doing and Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ controls Human History.
  - iii. Would be join others in petitioning for an investigation into the causes of the disaster.
  - iv. Those men who died gallantly at Rapido River had great courage and did not die BEFORE their time but EXACTLY at the right time and those who were believers went immediately to be with the Lord and he makes no mistakes and Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ controls Human History.
  - v. We should not be bitter as a result of this kind of thing and should not be concerned by the incompetence of General Mark Clark and not despise him for it.
  - vi. We must have and be able to use the Metabolized Bible Doctrine in our Stream of Consciousness of the Soul to cope with such disaster and in our time in the 21<sup>st</sup> century there will be historical disasters which will make the disaster of the Rapido River and Anzio look like a girl scout picnic.
6. Our personal question to ourselves must be "Am I ready for Historical Disaster TODAY" and if not we must get ourselves UNDER this command which is given to our right Pastor Teacher but in the execution of this command the believers in the Royal Family of God are directly involved as recipients of the teaching of the word of God in order to be capable of dealing with historical disaster.
  - i. Every generation MUST have a remnant of Super Grace and Ultra Super Grace believers and they will face historical disaster.
  - ii. Many men in World War II in combat and after saw terrible stupid mistakes made by senior officers which God many people killed and poor idiotic policies for war.
  - iii. Many many men died as a result of poor idiotic policies in Korea and Vietnam which start in our highest government office of president and down through the state department down to the battlefield which KILL people.

- iv. Could we handle it if as a result of this our friends and loved ones were wiped out???
- v. This is what it means to be able to apply Bible Doctrine when historical disaster hits in order for us to cope with it.
- vi. If not this is the screaming of a casualty in the Angelic Conflict and the believer who is diving into reversionism.

**Lesson #89                      Series # 469                      2Tim 4:2**

- I. The changing of leadership and communication systems continued
  - A. The apostles were the original communicators of the New Testament Scripture doctrines and he had incredible powers and was directly given scripture but did not have the completed canon.
    - 1. About ½ of the apostles were human authors of the New Testament Scripture and some others who wrote the scriptures were closely associated with the apostles.
    - 2. The greatest of the apostles was Paul himself.
  - B. The leadership was changing from the apostles with the dying declaration of Paul to Pastor Teacher of which we have a representative of all Pastor Teachers in Timothy.
    - 1. This transition occurred between AD68 and AD96 when the last apostle died John and from that time on ONLY Pastor Teachers are communicators of Bible Doctrine.
- II. The first carry on command is to the Super Grace believers and Pastor Teachers.
  - A. The first command is to the Pastor Teacher to publicly speak as the herald of a king and make known his policy.
    - 1. This is emphasis on the mechanics of the Pastor Teacher in communication of Bible Doctrine in order to give the Royal Family of God maximum opportunity to learn Bible Doctrine.
    - 2. This system demands strict academic discipline and concentration on the message presented by the herald the Pastor Teacher.
    - 3. The person or personality of the Herald is of absolutely NO importance to all of the Royal Family of God who must listen carefully and respectfully with concentration and self discipline.
    - 4. The ministry of the Pastor Teacher at the point of starting with a local church is to Study and Teach constantly and in the local church or local churches which he has is responsible for he has the final authority.
    - 5. The ministry of the Pastor Teacher is to be a LIFETIME of constant studying and teaching Bible Doctrine to his congregation or congregations.
      - i. Aside (the life if each of us hangs by a very fine thread and we along with our Pastor Teacher can be taken home at any time on his timing)
    - 6. The Pastor Teacher is to teach the content of the bible which is made up of words in the Greek, Aramaic and Hebrew.
    - 7. The Pastor Teacher must LEAD his congregation to the objectives of tactical victory in the Angelic Conflict therefore he must have achieved them himself.
    - 8. The key to attaining Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace is consistent with the Positive Volition concept toward the public teaching of Bible Doctrine.
    - 9. Therefore teaching Bible Doctrine in public assembly of the local church is the PRIMARY but not only function of the Pastor Teacher.
    - 10. The prerequisite of this function is constant persistent consistent study of the scripture.
  - B. The Pastor Teacher has a different set of standards for happiness than anyone else **Phil 4:1**
    - 1. The highest standard of life for the Pastor Teacher is the happiness gained from the congregation who reaches Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.
    - 2. No Pastor Teacher can ever be happy without a congregation and therefore 2 or 3 must gather under his ministry.

3. If he leads anyone in his congregation to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace or Ultra Super Grace he then receives the Wreath of Glory the highest decoration for the Church Age.
  4. This means for the Pastor Teacher from the time he enters the local church behind the pulpit his primary objective in filling in his time in life is to study and communicate.
  5. The Pastor Teacher is not quite a normal human as his whole Scale of Values is centered on something very different than most other people.
  6. His total objective of life is tied into his congregation whether local and face to face or distant on other communication medium and is not based in the desire to make money or become famous or advance in any physical realm.
  7. The basic happiness of the Pastor Teacher therefore can be categorized as Category IV love and the Pastor Teacher loves those who are under consistent Positive Volition no matter who they are or what they are like and he does not necessarily even know them.
- C. We must be totally clear on the fact that the fundamental and basic responsibility of the Pastor Teacher but not the ONLY responsibility is to teach.
1. No one can teach what he does not know therefore his responsibility is to STUDY constantly and consistently in order to teach the doctrines of scripture.
  2. A lot of Pastor Teachers being heralds take off from seminary with great zeal without any real knowledge of the policies of the king and try to teach and explain policies which he does not even understand himself.
  3. The King of Kings is Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and he has a policy and a plan and all members of the Royal Family of God in the Church Age are in it and people cannot even identify themselves as being in the plan and under the policy as royalty because they have not been given the policy by anyone who actually knows it.
  4. The Pastor Teacher must learn the plan and policy and after that must go and tell the people the plan and policy but he must constantly study the plan and policy in order to effectively understand it and the only way TODAY for a person to understand this plan and policy properly is to have the knowledge to understand the language and background under which it was written.
- D. The Second Command:
1. To stand by here means to be “on stand by” or to be “On Alert” or to Stick to it.
  2. The thing which makes the Pastor Teacher stick to it and be alert is his study of the original languages of the canon of scripture to dig out doctrinal principles from his personal study.
  3. Having the gift to do this makes him alert as he transfers Bible Doctrine to his own soul.
  4. Therefore Lots of constant and consistent study daily makes the Pastor Teacher alert and able to stick to his job.
  5. The Pastor Teacher is a one man Quick Reaction Force and his life and function is a constant Red Alert.
  6. The Pastor Teacher who does his job properly has no breathing space in life and his objectives in life are very different than all of the rest of us and he must CONSTANTLY study and prepare for a test EVERY DAY he teaches and he should teach EVERY DAY to his capacity.
  7. The Pastor Teacher is a slave and his master does not tolerate him FAKING IT OUT in his job of carrying on.
  8. This also means that no matter how busy the Pastor Teacher is he always has time to get out of fellowship but he must consistently do his job as he is commanded by the greatest Ultra Super Grace believer ever to have lived the Apostle Paul when he transferred the leadership and communication of Bible Doctrine to Timothy a Pastor Teacher.
- E. The Pastor Teacher in fulfilling this command must dedicate his whole life to constant study of the word.

1. Many pastors never fulfill this command since their happiness is based on some other standard such as having a large congregation or a great ministry etc.
  2. Some think that when they get into a local church they must immediately begin to start a tape ministry.
  3. One of the biggest mistakes a Pastor Teacher can make is to listen to what members of the congregation think about his teaching, some of the worst sermons ever given were thought by someone to be GOOD!! and vice versa.
  4. The thing is in this world for a very long time especially in this country people are starving to death spiritually.
  5. Happiness for the Pastor Teacher lies in his function of studying and teaching not getting involved in DOING anything except studying and teaching.
  6. The simple thing about being a Pastor Teacher is that the Pastor Teacher is married to the word of God and the Bible is his Right Woman and if he does his job right he makes love to her every hour on the hour.
  7. If he neglects her he will be miserable the rest of his life.
  8. The life of the Pastor Teacher is the bible and everything else is incidental but this does not mean he does not do anything else but everything outside the bible is INCIDENTAL and the word of God is more important than anything else in life.
  9. The Pastor Teacher is not inhuman but he must have his priorities straight and if he has a church his whole life is the word of God.
  10. This is what it means to be ALERT, to stick to studying and teaching.
- F. Occasionally there may be something which the Pastor Teacher may want to participate in during time for bible class but he does not and instead presents his teaching in times when it is NOT convenient for him to do so.
1. The Pastor Teacher is subject to a schedule and when a schedule is established there is to be NO EXCEPTIONS.
- G. Summary:
1. Teach or Proclaim the word is the first command to carry on emphasizing the importance to teaching Bible Doctrine publicly, be alert and stick to studying and teaching is command 2<sup>nd</sup> and emphasizes the importance of studying in order to have something to proclaim.
  2. The consistency of studying and teaching is reflected in the 2 adverbs translated in season and out of season.
  3. Sometimes it is convenient to study and some passages are interesting to the Pastor Teacher and some not and all believers have areas of special interests in Bible Doctrine but it is all the word of God and equally important and all part of the PROCLAMATION principle.
    - i. Whether the Pastor Teacher is personally interested or NOT he must still study it thoroughly and then teach it.
    - ii. Sometimes it is convenient to study and sometimes NOT and neither pressure of life, illness, nor social distractions or any pleasure or disaster of life must hinder the Pastor Teacher from studying and teaching.
    - iii. The Pastor Teacher must spend MOST of his time in studying and then teach what he has learned and we must realize that Studying is fine when you feel good when there are no distractions either positive or negative.
    - iv. The Pastor Teacher must study no matter what the situation is.
    - v. When the believer has a disaster and for instance someone close dies the employer allows time off to go to the funeral and weep for a lost friend or loved one.

- vi. The Pastor Teacher cannot do this and he must concentrate and study and dig no matter how he feels personally or how sick he is or how exhausted, he must study and study and study and there is no time off for the Pastor Teacher.
  - vii. This should not ever cause the Pastor Teacher to complain since if you have the gift of Pastor Teacher then you might as well go along for the ride and the Lord will show you that the RIDE IS GREAT.
  - viii. Most people and especially women would never make it doing this the women not being sustained by God the Holy Spirit.
  - ix. For many men there are other things more important to them like making money, work related functions, partying and having a good time, etc.
  - x. Nothing can get in the way of the Pastor Teacher in his studying and teaching Bible Doctrine.
  - xi. Anyone who has the gift of Pastor Teacher must take this into consideration when they are preparing for the ministry and when they get to their local church and congregation.
4. Studying the word of God is as important to the Pastor Teacher as Eating and breathing and nothing short of death should ever stop the Pastor Teacher from studying and teaching.
- i. The Pastor Teacher must inhale the word of God on a daily basis and search out and find the hidden manna and eat it for his own nourishment as well as the nourishment of the sheep in his congregation.
  - ii. The Pastor Teacher must like the female wolf over eat the nourishment from the word of God and then regurgitate it for the cubs in the congregation.
  - iii. The Pastor Teacher grows from what he studies and then communicates what he has studied so that the congregation also grows.
  - iv. This is a GREAT life for the Pastor Teacher but for the one without the spiritual gift the pressure will drive them out of the ministry and they will have a miserable life while trying to function as a Pastor Teacher.
  - v. For the Pastor Teacher with the spiritual gift of Pastor Teacher pressure is meaningless and they will enjoy studying under pressure or without pressure and they will teach when under pressure or without pressure.
- H. The meaning of “Reprove”:
- 1. To convict in a court of law, this is public speaking where the room is full of people and you are proving someone is wrong in front of all of them.
    - i. In most cases in life is you are in charge of others and you must rebuke or reprove them do it in private because first, you might be wrong and the fewer who know you are wrong the better, and second, it is very embarrassing for the person involved to be rebuked.
    - ii. To establish your authority with a group you must find the trouble maker and reprimand him in front of everyone.
    - iii. Although these are antithetical concepts there is a place for both.
  - 2. This is a PUBLIC rebuke and it is as doctrinal principles go a PERSONAL rebuke.
    - i. This is public because the Pastor Teacher presents doctrinal teaching in a public forum and may be teaching something which is pertinent to your situation and of which you may be guilty but he does not know if you are guilty of this or not.
      - a. Neither does the public know you are being rebuked or reprimanded unless you give yourself away.
    - ii. This is a personal reprimand in that ALL BIBLE TEACHING MUST BE PERSONAL but it is not directed to you based on some knowledge the Pastor Teacher has of you and your situation.
      - a. It is for you and all of us and is personal to you.





- v. These people as those who malign or as part of conspiracies in the local church and who are thrown out of the church and eventually find some other church to try to destroy.

**Lesson #90      Series # 469      2Tim 4:3**

- I. People can be divided into 3 groups:
  - A. Those who make things happen
  - B. Those who watch things happen
  - C. Those who wonder what happened
- II. God gave man 5 senses:
  - A. Touch
  - B. Taste
  - C. Smell
  - D. Sight
  - E. Hearing
  - F. The right kind of man has learned 2 more:
    - 1. Horse
    - 2. Common
    - 3. These will fair much better than the others
- III. The first series of carry on commands Continued:
  - A. Only the one with the spiritual gift of Pastor Teacher who HAS A CONGREGATION has any authority.
  - B. There are essential commands to the Pastor Teacher as leader in the church:
    - 1. Proclaim the doctrine
    - 2. Study the Word of God
    - 3. Discipline publicly when needed
      - i. This is to be used when a “ringleader” is found in a group who is trying to overthrow some authority or is mouthing off about policy.
    - 4. Privately rebuke or reprimand when needed
      - i. To avoid embarrassing the individual and in case YOU ARE WRONG.
  - C. Command #5 – Exhort, to help, to summon to one’s side for help, comfort, encourage, cheer up, incite by words or advice, advise or warn earnestly
    - 1. This is a command to all Pastor Teachers throughout the Church Age.
  - D. The Pastor Teacher is to be tenacious and steadfast in fulfillment of the ministry through studying and teaching of Bible Doctrine.
  - E. This completes the changing of the guard or transfer of the leadership of the church from Apostles to Pastor Teachers.
    - 1. Paul is relieved of his responsibilities as leader of the church and Timothy is appointed to take his place.
    - 2. As such the old communicators of Bible Doctrine in the early Church Age is now changed to the new communicators of Bible Doctrine in the remaining Church Age.
    - 3. This will be a fact once the canon of scripture is completed and this chapter can be summarized under the metaphor of passing the colors of one leader to another.
  - F. There are Additional Commands for the Pastor Teacher who reaches Ultra Super Grace **2Tim 4:5**
- IV. Doctrine of Pastor Teacher:
  - A. Definition and concept:
    - 1. Since every believer is a royal priest in the Royal Family of God it is imperative to understand the system of authority which God has delegated to the Pastor Teacher as well as understand his responsibility.

- i. Every believer needs to realize what a Pastor Teacher should do and how much authority the Pastor Teacher possesses.
  - ii. Knowing how much authority a Pastor Teacher has should stop believers from criticizing the ministry of any Pastor Teacher.
  - iii. Despite the fact that there is no Pastor Teacher who is perfect and that all Pastor Teachers can improve the responsibility for the improvement of the Pastor Teacher does not lie with the believer in the congregation.
  - iv. This very often occurs with believers who have exceeded the spiritual growth of some local Pastor Teacher who is not actually doing a very good job.
  - v. These people are disruptive and in effect attacking the authority of this Pastor Teacher.
  - vi. Assuming that the pastor being criticized is the absolute worst Pastor Teacher ever and knows a bit about the gospel and salvation but very little else and for the Christian Way of Life he gives morality and asceticism lectures.
  - vii. Although this Pastor Teacher may be the worst pastor ever HE STILL HAS THE AUTHORITY IN HIS LOCAL CHURCH, therefore you don't have any right to criticize his ministry in any way or try to get others to form a tape group with you.
  - viii. People have simply LOST TRACK of where the authority lies and God has given this authority to a select group of men.
  - ix. The point is that if you don't like the ministry of a Pastor Teacher you have every right to MOVE out and Move on to another Pastor Teacher in another local church but you HAVE NO RIGHT TO CRITICIZE HIM IN ANY WAY.
2. There are 2 basic categories of authority which exist in this Church Age:
- i. Overt authority which is the divinely delegated authority to the Royal Family of God royal priest in the form of Bible Doctrine.
    - a. The Pastor Teacher is the communicator of Bible Doctrine authorized by God and he has received from God the delegated authority to communicate Bible Doctrine.
    - b. Every believer who does not have the spiritual gift of Pastor Teacher is dependent on their own right Pastor Teacher for spiritual growth.
  - ii. Inner authority which is the function of the believers volition of soul in compatibility with Bible Doctrine as delineated from the Pastor Teacher's teaching.
  - iii. The function of the Pastor Teacher brings together the 2 basic systems of authority in the Church Age:
    - a. Bible Doctrine Transferred to the individual's soul by the teaching of Bible Doctrine by the Pastor Teacher.
    - b. Consequently the Pastor Teacher has a spiritual gift sovereignly bestowed by God the Holy Spirit at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God totally apart from human merit or ability.
    - c. This provides for the Pastor Teacher the right to go directly to the canon of scripture as he is qualified by his preparation to do so and dig out divine policy.
      - i ) The Canon of scripture is the preservation of all of the policies of God for the Royal Family of God in the Church Age and the gift of Pastor Teacher gives him the RIGHT to dig it out.
      - ii ) However, he needs more than the gift to do so and also needs the preparation to understand the original languages and history.
    - d. In addition he has the right to spiritual growth through direct contact with the canon of scripture.

- iv. The believers in the Church Age do not have any right to go directly to the canon of scripture for spiritual growth because if every believer could do this there would be NO AUTHORITY OVER THEM on earth and would be sheep without a shepherd.
    - a. As sheep we have been provided a shepherd from God and this is why we cannot exceed the spiritual growth of our right Pastor Teacher.
    - b. By having a shepherd to provide spiritual food for the sheep we are under authority both of Bible Doctrine and the Pastor Teacher.
    - c. However, there is no mold for the personality of a Pastor Teacher and there are an infinite number of possibilities for the personalities of the Pastor Teacher.
  - v. The Pastor Teacher is an individual who upon arriving at a local church where he has been called carries the highest spiritual authority and one of the greatest loads of authority God has ever given to any individual at any time.
  - vi. He carries the authority of the Prophet of Old Testament Scripture times, the authority of the apostle but limited to the local church only, and he must himself function under the first command to STUDY for apart from his own spiritual growth he will abuse the authority vested in him by God.
3. There are 2 ways of the Pastor Teacher abusing authority:
- i. This is a pastor simply trying to get his own way where the Will of God is not an issue in reality.
  - ii. This is also a Pastor Teacher who uses no authority at all and spends a great deal of time in prayer but should be using the other commands for discipline and reprimand instead of simply hoping the problems will go away.
  - iii. The Pastor Teacher must be very slow on changing and setting policies for his local church and must first establish his authority by his teaching of Bible Doctrine.
  - iv. Authority is the means by which the shepherd protects and cares for his flock by throwing out the malicious gossip and reprimands when people are dragging their feet with regard to divine policy related to the local church while keeping his nose out of the personal business of the members of the congregation.

B. Nomenclature of the Pastor Teacher:

- 1. (gr) keruzz == herald of the King who announces the policy of the king where the king is absent.
  - i. The Pastor Teacher has the job of disseminating the policy of the King of Kings which is found totally in the canon of scripture from the Hebrew, some Aramaic and Greek.
  - ii. The Pastor Teacher must first learn the policy from his own study of the original languages and then once he understands it he must communicate the policy to the Royal Family of God in his congregation.
  - iii. With the king being absent the herald carries the same authority in presenting the policy of the king and this is the Pastor Teacher.
- 2. (gr) presbuteros == Elder, old man or the person with the authority, thus the Overseer or Commanding Officer.
- 3. (gr) poimenos == Shepherd, Pastor Teacher is the function of the Pastor Teacher (Eph 4:11) and he is stronger and wiser than the sheep and he must lead and protect them by his strength and wisdom and must feed them.
- 4. (gr) episkopos == the policy making function of the Pastor Teacher, Guardian of the church, the policy maker, the one who enforces the policy of the local church.

5. (gr) Diakonos == Minister, the administrative function of the Pastor Teacher, all administrative power is delegated to the Pastor Teacher but he must delegate some of this in order to fulfill his function in the ministry of studying effectively.
  6. (gr) Diakonos is also used those who have received administrative power delegated from the Pastor Teacher in order to carry on administration of the local church == Deacon.
- C. The purpose of the Pastor Teacher **Eph 4:12-13, 2Tim 4:2**
1. Training and equipping the Royal Family of God for Combat in the Angelic Conflict.
  2. Vocation of the ministry
  3. Edification of the body of Christ which is teaching leading to spiritual growth.
    - i. This is to give every member of the Royal Family of God the opportunity to reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and Ultra Super Grace.
- D. The function of the Pastor Teacher **Eph 3:20-21**
1. He is to TEACH Bible Doctrine (gr) Didaskalos == the teaching of the Pastor Teacher in the public assembly of the local church to his congregation under his authority.
  2. Without the proper spiritual gift he cannot go to the canon and study and cannot dig out the doctrines but he may be able to evangelize his congregation every service, set up devotionals or set up some covering systems where the church carries the weak Pastor Teacher who does not teach Bible Doctrine.
  3. The pastorate is in effect an enlightened dictatorship and this is rarely understood today and this is often what drives people away from a properly functioning local church.
  4. Every pastor teaches within the framework of his personality but whatever his personality the authority is there if the communication of Bible Doctrine is there and all a believer has to do is find his right Pastor Teacher and stick with him.
- E. (gr) Mathetes == The assembled believer which is misunderstood and often translated as disciple which in fact means to be under strict academic discipline as a student or learner of Bible Doctrine.
1. Today the meaning is lost totally.
  2. As Royal Family of God the believer must be taught under conditions of privacy under strict discipline and MONOLOGUE in a group.
  3. By this function the Royal Family of God has privacy and brings this to class and learns Bible Doctrine and even when Bible Doctrine tramples on him no one knows if he is a smart believer.
  4. Some believers (generally fundamentalists) have no flexibility and no adaptability.
  5. We all must learn to adapt and when we learn we have been doing something one way and it is wrong we must become flexible and learn to ADAPT to the proper way.
  6. We must learn to do things RIGHT and there is always a right way and wrong way and we must learn the difference and adhere to the right way.
  7. This is being flexible about sin and using rebound and as believers and we can see the flexible adaptable believers who manage to take in Bible Doctrine without becoming subjective or feeling bullied or brow beaten etc.
  8. Therefore, the Pastor Teacher is a policy maker, a super student of Bible Doctrine, a spiritual leader, an administrator with the power of delegation of local church authority to DEACONS who operate only under this delegation of authority.
  9. Those who listen to the teaching of Bible Doctrine are disciples meaning students under strict discipline.
- F. The appointment of the Pastor Teacher
- G. Principle of the right Pastor Teacher and right congregation
- H. The Pastor Teacher as total product of grace
- I. Biblical documentation
- J. Authority of the Pastor Teacher Heb 13:7+17

- K. Reward for the Pastor Teacher if faithful.
- V. Those who will disobey the commands v3-4
  - A. There are believers who fail to execute the command to carry on; believers who resist the authority of the Pastor Teacher; believers who are a Law unto themselves; believers whose intensity of life minus a sense of humor makes them resent any authority and in their inflexibility they are not teachable.
    - 1. Some very talented people have ruined the potential of their talent by being NOT TEACHABLE.
    - 2. The only people whose talent is ever exploited are those who are flexible, adaptable and therefore teachable and when we get to the point where we think we have arrived at the top and there is nothing more to learn we have generally NOT and reversionism begins here.
  - B. Many believers in the Church Age will not advance in the Spiritual Life through the daily function of the Grace Apparatus for Perception and they will live become casualties in their generation and will live on the wrong side of history under the influence of evil.
    - 1. Some have learned enough Bible Doctrine so that they have made progress in the Spiritual Life.
    - 2. Some have started with great enthusiasm for Bible Doctrine and moved from infancy through adolescence to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God to Super Grace BUT they were overtaken by historical disaster and not having enough Bible Doctrine to cope with it they nose dived into reversionism winding up on the wrong side of history and never recovering living a miserable life ending with the Sin Unto Death.
    - 3. Some believers will reject Bible Doctrine and enter reversionism or some disaster will overwhelm them and they will then dive into reversionism.
  - C. There will be a time when there is general resistance to Bible Doctrine and the believers will live in reversionism.
    - 1. He is therefore evangelized by the apostles and evangelists of EVIL under Satan.
    - 2. There are people who listen all the time but do not do so willingly and endure the teaching and then criticize or pick it apart.
    - 3. This believer listens but it under Negative Volition and is critical and not absorbing, being subjective in listening not objective.
  - D. These believers will not listen to the Pastor Teacher who teaches true doctrine but will have a Positive Volition attitude toward false Bible Doctrine.
    - 1. When you find a person who resists Bible Doctrine saying no to it, he will say yes to false doctrine and satanic policies.
    - 2. This is why there are some generations where very few Pastor Teachers are able to obey the carry on commands since NO ONE WILL LISTEN.
    - 3. Therefore God has to take in certain generations some who have the gift of Pastor Teacher and function them off in another field there being no need for extra Pastor Teachers.
    - 4. Every person in the realm of their Old Sin Nature has certain lusts and what one person may lust after in terms of false teaching another may think this is ridiculous but he will have another area of lust.
    - 5. The fact of the passage is that anyone who says NO under Negative Volition to Bible Doctrine will open up the vacuum in the soul to draw in some form of false doctrine to which he says Yes to with Positive Volition.
    - 6. By this he will be enslaved to the plan and policy of Satan for this world.
    - 7. These believers under Negative Volition in reversionism will with Positive Volition toward satanic doctrines accumulate false doctrines according to their own lust patterns having this predilection for evil and will be evangelized into evil.

8. The reversionistic believer under Negative Volition to Bible Doctrine will find false teachers who will teach according to their own personal predilection to certain categories of evil.
9. These believers have an ITCH such that the more false doctrine they hear the more they want to hear and they will scratch this itch vigorously.
  - i. This is what we see over the past several decades in our congress with the stupid ass legislators promoting restrictive gun legislation and many of these will be born again reversionistic believers with this ITCH.
  - ii. These people are totally evangelized by EVIL and will vote for anything to reduce the power of the people and give more power to the government and anything which supports communism, socialism and welfare state functions.
  - iii. He does this as a believer who is resistant to Bible Doctrine under the influence of evil.
  - iv. These believers have this itch and are constantly desiring to hear new false doctrine related to social action and evil.
10. Negative Volition toward Bible Doctrine keeps this believer from obeying the command to carry on and they will not move to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace or Ultra Super Grace but they become a casualty in the Angelic Conflict resisting Bible Doctrine and by virtue of the intensity of his resistance of the truth he accepts ALL false doctrine there is.
11. This is why so many believers live their life on the wrong side of history and fail to reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and are under Negative Volition to Bible Doctrine and react and become reversionistic and are deprived of blessing in time, in dying and for phenomenal blessing for eternity.

**2Tim 4:2**

v2: As a herald of the King, make a public proclamation, delineate the plan and policy of the King of Kings from the original languages of the canon of scripture; stand by, be alert and stick to studying and teaching in time of opportunity when it is convenient and in time of no opportunity when it is not convenient; publicly reprimand, discipline, punish when necessary; convict, privately rebuke, reprimand, discipline face to face when out of line; exhort, help, comfort, cheer up, incite by words or advice, encourage through Bible Doctrine; be steadfast, tenacious, fixed in purpose, unshakable, immovable, unfailing in fulfilling the ministry by studying and teaching the word of God, by means of Bible Doctrine.

**2Tim 4:3**

v3: For the generation or time will be when people will as a result of strong Negative Volition to Bible Doctrine NOT endure, bear up with, put up with, listen willingly to accurate sound healthy public teaching of Bible Doctrine, but they, believers under Negative Volition in reversionism under the influence of evil, according to their own personal lusts regarding false doctrines, will accumulate to themselves false teachers to suit their own lusts because they have an itch in their faculty of hearing and are constantly anxious to hear new false doctrines.

**Lesson #91 Series # 469 2Tim 4:4**

- I. So very many believers live out their time on this earth without a single clue as to what the Plan of God and Purpose of God for their life is, without knowledge of his policy and are therefore left to their own devices they inevitably fall into reversionism, this is the GENIUS of Satan.
  - A. Just think about HOW many Christians in the world today are doing exactly what Satan wants them to do down to the exact letter of his policy and calling it spirituality and progress in and living the Spiritual Life.
    1. His genius is to take some system of morality or human efforts as works or some emotional experience and label it the Christian Way of Life and Spirituality while in fact these are all a part of EVIL the plan and policy of Satan.
  - B. All believers after Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God have a CHOICE which in fact must be made consistently and daily, to go with or away from Bible Doctrine.
    1. Bible Doctrine is the only information we have in this life with regard to God, his plan and policy, the Angelic Conflict, the reason for Sin in the world, and all the problems related to Satan ruling the earth, etc.

2. The believer who goes with Bible Doctrine goes the way of blessing while the believer who rejects Bible Doctrine goes the way of cursing and Divine Discipline.
  3. Whichever way the believer chooses he is a child of God a part of the Royal Family of God and he will experience the Love of God.
  4. For the believer who rejects Bible Doctrine the Love of God is expressed in Divine Discipline to direct the believer back to Bible Doctrine and the Plan of God.
  5. For the believer who accepts and goes along with Bible Doctrine the Love of God is expressed in divine blessing.
  6. The believer must make the choice personally and consistently.
- C. Any believer who rejects Bible Doctrine is not only in reversionism but under the influence of evil and out of control and accepting anything false.
1. No believer ever stands still with regard to indoctrination and he is either indoctrinated into the Grace Plan of God or the Evil plan of Satan.
  2. To reject Bible Doctrine is to be indoctrinated into the Evil Plan of Satan.
- II. 2<sup>nd</sup> command to Carry On to the Ultra Super Grace believer.
- A. There is a contrast established between v4 and v5 between the believers who will not make it and those who will.
1. Those who fail to execute the commands to carry on are OUT and those who execute them are IN and under the Grace Plan of God.
  2. This is an emphasis on Timothy and ALL communicators of Bible Doctrine.
  3. Timothy here is on his way to Ultra Super Grace having recovered from reversionism and regained his Status Quo of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace.
  4. Self discipline is essential for all believers in order to accomplish spiritual advance in the Protocol Plan of God and for the communicator it is his personal study of the word of God on a daily basis.
  5. No Pastor Teacher can take his congregation beyond his own spiritual growth and he must study daily.
  6. For the believer especially the Pastor Teacher in the Church Age everything in life must be subordinated to the daily function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception.
  7. The Pastor Teacher being different than all other believers has a spiritual gift which takes him into direct contact with the scriptures and his growth and his message which is to cause the growth of his congregation all comes from his personal study.
  8. The Pastor Teacher must have exceptional self discipline and make his study a way of life.
  9. Any man who does not have good study habits and exceptional self discipline should stay away from the ministry even if they possess the gift of Pastor Teacher.
  10. Apart from this self discipline in study habits there is no way the Pastor Teacher can grow and no way his congregation will grow.
  11. The self discipline of the congregation merges into group discipline in order to assimilate the doctrine taught by the Pastor Teacher.
- B. The Importance of Self Discipline:
1. Self discipline links the believers volition with the function of the Grace Apparatus for Perception.
    - i. You cannot function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception unless you have the self discipline which would bring you to sit down in a group or alone and listen to Bible Doctrine.
  2. Under self discipline the believer links his volition with the first priority of the Royal Family of God which is the inculcation of Bible Doctrine.
  3. Self discipline is the believer priest regulating his life in compatibility with the grace objectives of Phase II, life in TIME.

- i. Decisions must be constantly and consistently made to attend and concentrate in the Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine.
4. Self Discipline sets aside the superficialities of life and concentrated on the ESSENTIALS of Life.
  - i. The superficialities of life have a very definite 2<sup>nd</sup> place in the life of the believer under Positive Volition and with the first place belonging to the ESSENTIALS the intake of Bible Doctrine.
5. Self discipline avoids the distractions of pleasure social life and anything which would conflict with the daily intake of Bible Doctrine in the Grace Apparatus for Perception.
  - i. It does not allow them to conflict with bible classes.
  - ii. Interestingly enough is that fact that self discipline makes for better pleasure.
  - iii. Setting aside pleasure for Bible Doctrine results in acquiring better and greater capacities for pleasures and social life.
  - iv. This does not imply you do not have pleasure or social life but does indicate that if it conflicts with the intake of Bible Doctrine it is placed into a secondary role as NON-Essential.
  - v. Super Grace is not a high throne where the believer sits back and relishes his achievement but where he gains a GREATER capacity for life and much greater blessing
6. Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace is the beginning of spiritual maturity and NOT THE END.
  - i. It is achieved by Self discipline related to the function of the Grace Apparatus for Perception and perpetuated in the same way.
7. Super Grace therefore not only is the place of great blessing from receipt of the Super Grace package of blessings at Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God but in a sense it becomes a staging area for the next objective which is Ultra Super Grace.
8. The believer in attaining Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace must not stop and think he can rest on what he has achieved.
  - i. The principle is that if you stop too long you will go backward in the Spiritual Life.
  - ii. The believer must press on to the next objective of Ultra Super Grace under continuous pressure and opposition from the forces of Evil and will be obvious at that stage.

### III. The 3<sup>rd</sup> command to Carry ON:

- A. In going from Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace to Ultra Super Grace the opposition from evil will be very marked.
  1. Issues will come into focus at this point which have not been in focus for you before.
- B. There are 3 or 4 things which can cause the believer to crash into reversionism
  1. The Ultra Super Grace believer receives from God the highest honor from God for time the mantle of perpetual opposition from Satan and his forces of evil **Acts 19:15**
  2. Between Super Grace and Ultra Super Grace is No Man's Land where you will receive intensified opposition from satanic forces for which God has provided the merging of your Logistical Grace support with your Super Grace package of blessings for logistical support at this time.
    - i. One of these things in the Mental Attitude problem
    - ii. There are others here.
  3. Timothy is commanded along with all future Pastor Teachers and all believers who have reached Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace, to ENDURE opposition from Satan and His Evil System.



4. In other words all of your legitimate enemies from your spiritual advance and your unseen enemies from the whole satanic system of evil and demons and humans under the influence of satanic systems of evil.
  - i. Refer to Paul and Moses.
5. We wear our enemies and the more the enemies try to pressure you the greater your blessing and happiness and the more they hurt.
  - i. It is painfully obvious that the LORD has a GREAT sense of humor.

IV. The 4<sup>th</sup> command to Carry On:

- A. The field of evangelism here is not just giving the gospel to people individually or collectively but is the function of a missionary who teaches the gospel and then Bible Doctrine to the point of training new Pastor Teachers for the people.
- B. The word for evangelist here is (gr) Euaggelestes == to communicate as an Oracle and forecast the future,
  1. He was not someone who simply led people to the Lord through the gospel.
  2. He was a forecaster or prognosticator of future events
  3. In Acts 21:8 it was used for Phillip who was an evangelist as we understand it and he had the gift of evangelism and went from place to place giving the gospel and had many converts.
  4. In Eph 4:11 it was used for the Gift of Evangelism that Phillip had.
- C. Here as a command to Timothy in anticipation of his reaching Ultra Super Grace he is told to do the work or production of one a Euaggelestes.
  1. This gives the connotation of the office and function of a traditional evangelist but HERE it is entirely different.
  2. It means to Go from Place to Place and perform certain functions.
  3. The Apostles Did this going from one place to another traveling around the ancient world and they always started by speaking the gospel and then he formed a church and left another with a communication gift to take over the church.
  4. Paul started churches in Philippi and Thesalonica and Antioch, Lystra, Corinth.
  5. This therefore means to CONVERT people and then train them to reach and teach the people in their own area.
  6. This therefore means to do the actual true work of the missionary which is to take converts and train them to reach their own people.
  7. Timothy is eventually going to leave Ephesus and travel giving the gospel and convert people and then teach and train them as Paul did.
  8. The difference will be that the canon will have been completed and he will travel as did Paul and establish local churches and train Pastor Teachers to reach their congregations and evangelists to reach the people in that area.
    - i. This was the problem with China Inland Mission since they did not do this and eventually endorsed communism and never trained the Chinese to go out and convert other Chinese.

V. The 5<sup>th</sup> Command to carry on:

- A. All Pastor Teachers especially those who reach Ultra Super Grace Status Quo are commanded to COMPLETELY carry out their Spiritual gift of Pastor Teacher studying and teaching constantly.

VI. The Doctrine of Diakonia & Diakonos

- A. Political Meaning:
  1. It is translated minister if you understand it is used for the head of a state who has the authority to administer capital punishment **Rom 13:3-4**
  2. Deacon was used in the bible to indicate a political ruler and one who had the authority to administer in the political realm of the national entity.
- B. Universal Ministry of the Believer:
  1. Every believer has a ministry and a responsibility before the Lord.

2. For the Royal Family of God it is all believers being in full time Christian service and emphasizes the Royal Ambassadorship of the believer in the Church Age. **2Cor 3:6, 4:1, 6:1+3**
  - i. The power and authority comes from Metabolized Bible Doctrine in your own Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and the implication is that if you take in ENOUGH Bible Doctrine you will come to the area of production of Divine Good and will be a worker but the works will be the natural result of spiritual growth not a means of it.
- C. Administration of the local church:
  1. The Pastor Teacher has all the authority but he delegates authority to certain men in the local church to carry on administration. **Phil 1:1**
  2. This is a man who has received delegated authority from the Pastor Teacher to carry on administrative activities in the local church.
- D. Pastoral use:
  1. The Pastor Teacher is also called a minister (Diakonos) and all authority in the local church is delegated to the Pastor Teacher by God and Bible Doctrine and this is then delegated to certain men in the congregation. **1Cor 3:5, Eph 3:7, Col 1:7, Col 1:23, 1Thes 3:2, 1Tim 1:12**
  2. This is a technical use of Minister for the Pastor Teacher.
- E. Evil Use:
  1. For false apostles of evil the servants of Satan. **2Cor 11:13-15**
- F. Principle:
  1. No Pastor Teacher can carry out his ministry to the maximum without the daily function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception in his personal study which is the means of his own spiritual growth and means of feeding his congregation.
  2. By constantly and consistently feeding doctrine to his congregation the Pastor Teacher leads his congregation to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God, Super Grace and Ultra Super Grace the tactical victories of the Angelic Conflict.
  3. No congregation can exceed the spiritual growth of its Pastor Teacher and therefore the Pastor Teacher must press on to lead the way to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and Ultra Super Grace.

**2Tim 4:4**

**v4: In Fact, under Negative Volition to Bible Doctrine, they will continue to reject, repudiate, turn their ears away from Bible Doctrine communicated by the Pastor Teacher then they, being in reversionism and on the wrong side of history, will constantly swerve out of control toward any false myths of evil.**

**2Tim 4:5-**

**v5: But you, Timothy and all future Pastor Teachers, especially you and only you, always be well balanced, sober, self controlled, self disciplined, in all things continuing your functions under the Grace Apparatus for Perception, endure hardship and opposition from evil, execute THE high quality work of the function of an evangelistic missionary traveling and training new Pastor Teachers for the indigenous population, carry out completely and fully your own spiritual gift ministry of Pastor Teacher as an Ultra Super-Grace believer.**

**Lesson #92      Series # 469      2Tim 4:6**

- I. The transfer of Church Age teaching leadership continued:
  - A. The canon of scripture was completed in AD96 and it is imperative that EVERY believer understand that the Canon is the entire policy, plans, and concepts of the Grace Plan of God.
    1. The thinking of God has been reduced in writing since God has not intention of communicating with any member of the Human Race since the completion of the canon until the rapture occurs.
  - B. All the principles, plans, policies of God are in the scripture and the objective is to transfer these things to the soul of the believer in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and this cannot be accomplished apart from the Pastor Teacher who is the ONLY AUTHORIZED communicator of doctrine.

- C. Paul as did Moses and a Few other known believers as Ultra Super Grace believers receive their logistical support from God along with and merged with their Super Grace package of blessings in 5 categories which are intensified beyond imagination and the HONOR of being subject to the continuous pressure of the mantle of opposition from the satanic system and participants which only serves to ENHANCE the blessings.
1. Review the 5 categories of Super Grace blessings
  2. The most phenomenal thing for the Ultra Super Grace believer is that when he dies his spiritual growth HOLDS UP EVERY SUBSEQUENT GENERATION OF HISTORY.
  3. The Mantle of Opposition from the satanic system is a necklace worn around the neck of the believer in Ultra Super Grace and includes:
    - i. Persons
    - ii. Satanic Minions or Demons
    - iii. Evil System of Satan
  4. We will see some of the enemies of Paul in action in the rest of this chapter who came to Rome to accuse him before Nero and see that he was executed.
    - i. These are cursed in this action and Paul is greatly blessed and even in dying as they continue their opposition.

## II. Paul in Dying Grace

- A. For the Ultra Super Grace believer there is great opposition for him in dying and it simply makes his dying more tranquil and more blessed.
1. This is Paul's dying stage of life ending up with his decapitation.
  2. Paul in his life was never very healthy and most likely thought many times he was dying and even on one occasion was actually stoned to death.
  3. He has had a life of many illnesses, adversities and problems but this is in fact the time period of his dying and it will be the period of the greatest happiness of his life before he is transferred from time to eternity.
- B. Principle:
1. The believer who LIVES well progressing spiritually advancing from spiritual infancy to spiritual adolescence to spiritual maturity breaking into Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace by the daily function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception will die well.
  2. Whether he reaches Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and dies or goes on to Ultra Super Grace and dies.
  3. His dying will be the greatest part of his life in great tranquility and all pain will be neutralized by the great blessing he is receiving in dying grace.
  4. This is very unusual in the Human Race and most people die horribly and lose their composure when they are dying being in great pain and agony becoming hysterical and fall apart and death becomes a reality which they cannot cope with and cannot face.
  5. HOWEVER Those who live well under the Grace Plan of God will die well and the Lord selects the time, place and manner of our death.
  6. None of us can ever question the Lord about the manner in which he will take us out of this world.
  7. Apart from the rapture occurring WE WILL ALL DIE and that is a good thing since we can check out each other and see each other as we are not and check who because of Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine had a wonderful death and those who had Negative Volition either constantly or at different times and never grew to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and see how horrible their death was.
  8. No 2 of us will ever face death the same way and even if God gave us all EXACTLY the same death no 2 would ever handle it the same way.

9. DEATH is the final blessing in life for the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace or Ultra Super Grace BUT it is also the final test in life to be able to handle death beautifully without any problem.
10. For the believer who neglects or rejects Bible Doctrine in reversionism DEATH is the worst part of his punishment and it must be painful and miserable and WILL be his worst hour.
11. For those who stick to Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine their death will be one of phenomenal blessings.
12. The Lord selects the time, place and manner of our death but in dying how we die will reflect our entire Spiritual Life and to die in great happiness and blessing and have greater blessing in time than we had in living is an obvious sign of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.
13. To die in misery and pain reflects the believer who has fallen from Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God or rejected Bible Doctrine and is a failure in the Spiritual Life.

C. Paul is now saying using the custom of the Greeks which were adopted by the Romans in his time of pouring out an offering to their gods and applying it to this Roman execution.

1. His life is the wine of the goblet of the offering and it is being poured out so that when the goblet is poured out his life is ended and his soul will leave his body.
2. This pouring out of Paul's life is occurring at the time of this writing but is going on and will be completed in a future time some months away.
3. Therefore Paul is in DYING GRACE Status Quo.

D. (gr) Analisis ==:

1. Military command when the bivouac was about to be removed and the company being readied to march again, thus it meant to Paul to STRIKE THE TENT or BREAK CAMP, MARCHING OFF FROM THE BIVOUC OF LIFE INTO ETERNITY.
2. Naval command to HOIST ANCHOR and SAIL OFF and Paul was hoisting his anchor to this life and sailing off into eternity.
3. Farming term of unyoking the oxen and shelter, feed and reward them with rest and Paul is being unyoked from this life and allowed to rest and relax in heaven.
4. Prison term for the prisoner released from incarceration therefore for Paul it meant being RELEASED from the prison of his body of corruption into the glorious freedom of heaven.
5. Philosophical term for unraveling a mystery or solving an incredible problem and for Paul death unravels the mystery of eternity.

E. Paul has lived a wonderful spiritual life and now as an Ultra Super Grace believer is on that high golden bridge and moving from time into eternity.

1. Paul's life was one of the most fantastic blessing because he enjoyed his Super Grace blessings and his Ultra Super Grace enhancements of his blessings.

III. Doctrine of Dying Grace:

A. There are 7 categories of DEATH in the bible and not all death is the end of life.

1. Some death is death without ending life and other types of death occur while you are alive and other types of death while living are being dead while trying to live.
2. Spiritual Death which occurs for every human being at physical birth simultaneously with with the Inhale of the spark of life from God there is also the imputation of Adam's Original Sin to the genetic Old Sin Nature resulting in spiritual death. **Rom 5:12, 6:23, 1Cor 15:22, Eph 2:1**

i. The Old Sin Nature means that the human being at physical birth cannot receive eternal life because of his spiritual death from his genetic Old Sin Nature.

- a. This individual when born has no relationship with God and God only provides for him physical life in order for him to enter into the Historical period of the angelic appeal trial of the Angelic Conflict.

- ii. In his soul he has volition and at the proper time he can respond to the gospel if his volition is positive.
    - a. The inhale of this gospel information by the person is similar to the inhale of the spark of life at physical birth and at this time God the Holy Spirit under the principle of Common Grace makes this information a reality to him and he then can exhale either Negative Volition with rejection of the gospel or Positive Volition with faith alone in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ alone.
    - b. This is the exhale of being born again if Positive Volition results in faith in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
  - iii. We must be BORN AGAIN said Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ because we are born spiritually dead.
    - a. Spiritual Death is separation from God in time and is the penalty of sin.
    - b. When Christ was on the cross being judged for the sins of humanity the penalty he received in substitution for us was spiritual death.
  - iv. While very much alive Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ said on the cross “it is finished” in that all the necessary work for the potential for Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God for every human being was totally completed.
    - a. Then Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ was able to die physically as the ministry of the 1<sup>st</sup> advent was completed.
    - b. Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ died 2 times on the cross in order that we might have the option of being BORN 2 Times.
3. Physical Death whereby the individual has his body separated from his soul. **Matt 8:22, Rom 8:38-39**
- i. The body represents Biological Life and it is the house for the REAL life imputed at physical birth which is Soul Life.
  - ii. When the soul leaves the body you are physically dead, it is not when your heart stops but when the soul departs and is represented by no EEG activity.
4. Second Death, the most awful of all deaths, and is the final judgment of the unbeliever and Fallen Angels. **Rev 20:12-15, Heb 9:27**
- i. This will occur at the end of the millennium when history is over and all unbelievers since the beginning of TIME in Human History are resurrected and judged based on their works compared to the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ on the cross and then cast into the Lake of Fire, this is the 2<sup>nd</sup> death.
5. Operational Death, is the believer’s failure to produce Divine Good, **James 2:26**
6. Positional Death is part of the ministry of God the Holy Spirit at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God under the Baptism of God the Holy Spirit identifying us with the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ on the cross thus this is POSITIONAL death, Rom 6, Col 2:12, 2:20, 3:3.
- i. When Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ was on the cross and under a Substitutionary Spiritual Death for our sins, all the sins of the Old Sin Nature were imputed to him and judged.
  - ii. The area of strength of the Old Sin Nature produces all of our Human Good and all EVIL and this is the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil brought into the life of every person at the point of his physical birth.
  - iii. This part of the function of the Old Sin Nature was not judged in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ on the cross but rejected by him.
  - iv. It was not judged because Human Good and Evil must continue throughout all of Human History since it is the plan and policy of Satan and the results of functioning in that plan and is the issue of the Angelic Conflict.

- v. Man must use his volition to choose for the Plan of God of the Plan of Satan, GRACE or EVIL.
  - vi. At Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God under the principle of the Baptism of God the Holy Spirit we are entered into union with Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and are under retroactive positional truth and current positional truth.
  - vii. Therefore as a believer in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ positionally we have rejected Human Good and Evil at the point of Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God and the Baptism of God the Holy Spirit.
  - viii. Evil is the policy of Satan for ruling this world and Human Good is the function under that policy and the result of the success of that policy in the life of any individual.
  - ix. Under the Baptism of God the Holy Spirit being identified with Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ in his death we have automatically rejected Evil and Human Good since he rejected them on the cross.
  - x. In addition being identified with Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ in this resurrection, ascension and session we are also then a member of the Royal Family of God forever.
7. Temporal Death is the believer out from under the Filling of God the Holy Spirit and out of “fellowship” with God.
- i. At Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God we are entered into union with Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ seated at the right hand of God the Father and we never get out of that position.
  - ii. In addition we have a relationship with God in time called “fellowship” and in the Church Age it is the Filling of God the Holy Spirit.
  - iii. Every time we enter into carnality by sin we are OUT OF FELLOWSHIP and every time we use the rebound procedure of 1John 1:9, naming our sins to God, we are restored to fellowship and under the Filling of God the Holy Spirit.
  - iv. When a believers sins therefore he is OUT of Fellowship and it is called being Temporarily Dead to God, Rom 8:6+13, Eph 5:14, 1Tim 5:6, James 1:15, Rev 3:1
8. Sexual Death is the inability to copulate Rom 4:17-21, Heb 11:11-12
- i. This relates to Abraham who is unable to have sex at age 99
  - ii. Despite this God had given Abraham and Sarah a promise that they would have a son who would be the basis for the Jewish Race and Jewish Nation being formed.
  - iii. Abraham reached Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace at Age 99 and Sarah was under phenomenal blessing by association and they received this promise.
- B. Physical Death:
- 1. Associated with ending revolution and says you must kill those revolting, **Num 16:25-31**
  - 2. A matter of the sovereignty of God and he decides how every person is going to die and when we mourn and grieve the loss of a loved one must remember that this is God’s sovereign decision and we must never blame God in any way for the death of a loved one
    - i. We must never question the manner, time or place of their death since it is God’s sovereign decision always based on ALL facts and we simply must accept this. **Ps 68:19-20**
  - 3. There is one thing which is stronger than death and that is TRUE Love **SS 8:6, 14:27**
  - 4. God can and does under certain conditions PROLONG human life and his death can be postponed for a certain period, **Ps 102:19-20, 23-24, 118:18, Prov 14:27**
    - i. Many children by recognizing the authority of the parent in the home regardless of how that authority was exercised has lived much longer than he was originally scheduled to live.

5. Women are responders and as such they cannot ever be equal with men and in death women must be taught to face the death of loved ones as responders, Jer 9:20-25.
  - i. Because of the death of a loved one a woman as a responder goes into very intensive grief and there is very little control over that grief apart from Bible Doctrine.
  - ii. Therefore women must be taught and trained to face the death of loved ones.
6. The Sin Unto Death does not bring glory to God. **Is 38:18**
  - i. This is the system of dying for the believer under incredible Divine Discipline and his leaving this life under a horrible way.
7. Physical death cannot be faced with the norms and standards of the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul are destroyed. **Lam 1:19-20**
  - i. This is what occurs in reversionism and the reversionist always loses the norms and standards related to the Divine Viewpoint of life.
  - ii. He cannot face death and its reality overwhelms him when he realizes he is going to die since his doctrinal norms and standards are gone.
8. Dying Grace is promotion for the believer **Phil 1:21**
  - i. Death is profit for the believer who has reached Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace or Ultra Super Grace.
9. God provides in Dying Grace **Amos 5:8**
  - i. There never was ever in Human History ever a mature believer who did not have every provision in his dying and great blessing in that dying.
10. God delivers the believer from Death **Job 5:20, Ps 33:19, 56:13, 116:8**

C. Definition:

1. Dying Grace is the death of the believer who by the constant function under the Filling of God the Holy Spirit and the Grace Apparatus for Perception has reached Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace or Ultra Super Grace and has received his Super Grace blessing package.
2. You can die either at Status Quo of Super Grace or Ultra Super Grace and be qualified for dying grace.
3. Dying grace is the experience of physical death under the special provision of grace whereby the individual is blessed to the maximum in dying and this is a greater blessing than any other in life.
4. This is minimal pain, maximum happiness and fantastic soul stimulation during dying.

D. Dying Grace is the missing link between time and eternity and it is the greatest happiness in life.

1. There is a GAP between Super Grace and Ultra Super Grace blessings in time and Surpassing Grace blessings for eternity.
2. This Gap is linked by Dying Grace Blessings
3. The believer who dies the Sin Unto Death is Going to Heaven and it can be likened to a LOW CRAWL through Ground Glass and Barbed Wire and is horrible and Painful and Miserable but once he arrives in heaven he will have Ultimate Sanctification with a Resurrection Body minus the Old Sin Nature, Human Good and the Lake of Fire.
4. A large number of believers will have only this in heaven.
5. Those believers who go over the High Golden Bridge in Super Grace and Ultra Super Grace in eternity under Surpassing Grace they will have the MOST FANTASTIC BLESSINGS.
6. There will be an incredible difference in the Status Quo of believers in heaven and the lowest to the highest believers will all have the Resurrection Body minus the Old Sin Nature and minus Human Good since all believers are guaranteed ultimate sanctification.
  - i. This is a billion times greater than the Lake of Fire.

7. Meanwhile they will be low on the social ranking in heaven because the surpassing grace passage of blessings prepared for every believer will only be received by those who make Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.
    - i. This is what is called Escrow Blessings for Eternity while the Escrow Blessings for Time are the Super Grace packaged of blessings for the believer who has reached Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace or Ultra Super Grace.
  8. Unfortunately MOST people think that in order to be rewarded in heaven you must DO Things for God and do things to grow spiritually and work for God being a good person helping others and follow a set of rules or programs and this is totally FALSE.
  9. The crown of the believer is not at all based on what you do and in fact it is NEVER what you do which counts in this life EVEN FOR THE UNBELIEVER.
  10. Most people are under the impression that you must be a DOER of things in life but what actually counts in this life is WHAT YOU THINK and most people are incapable of Divine Viewpoint thought.
  11. Therefore Most people cannot think and cannot concentrate for more than a few minutes and what life is all about is in fact what is in your SOUL and what you THINK.
  12. The interesting thing about doing is that ALL GREAT doing is based on GREAT THOUGHT and doing is merely byproduct of THINKING.
  13. Therefore getting to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and moving on to Ultra Super Grace is a constant function of the Grace Apparatus for Perception which provides the fuel for thinking the Divine Viewpoint.
  14. We have seen in Phil 3 that one of the greatest dangers to the believer in Super Grace moving forward toward Ultra Super Grace is to fall back into Human Viewpoint and crash dive into reversionism.
  15. There is always the challenge to the believer in the Spiritual Life advancing as to WHAT ARE YOU THINKING.
  16. In order to think you must have a vocabulary to think with and we must learn a greater and greater vocabulary and review constantly to have a technical vocabulary to think in terms of doctrinal principles.
  17. It is the technical vocabulary in any field which causes you to grow in that field especially in the field of Bible Doctrine and the Spiritual Life.
  18. Many people have such a terrible time dying and not understanding why they or their loved ones have died because they have not vocabulary and not ability to think in terms of the true aspects of DEATH.
  19. Dying Grace is for mature believers who get their by learning vocabulary and putting this into categories and moving into Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and even Ultra Super Grace and for either dying grace.
  20. Therefore Dying Grace is the LINK between the phenomenal blessing package for the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace or Ultra Super Grace and the greater unimaginable blessings for this believer in eternity.
  21. This is the fantastic means of going from the wonderful blessings of time to the more than wonderful blessings of eternity.
  22. Therefore DYING is the link between time and eternity and whereby the believer goes from glory to glory and blessing to greater blessing.
  23. For the believer who reaches Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace or Ultra Super Grace this is the BEST in time however Dying Grace blessings are better than that and surpassing grace blessings for eternity are BETTER than the BETTER than the best.
- E. Dying Grace is for the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace or Ultra Super Grace ONLY **Ps 33:18-19**.



1. Only the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God can be under occupation with the Lord.
  2. In time of dying the one who has confidence in the Lord and under Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ is delivered and his soul is delivered.
  3. In time of economic depression and disaster GOD PROVIDES and keeps alive the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.
- F. Dying Grace removes fear from Death **Ps 23:4**
1. “Even though I walk through the valley of the DEEP Darkness of Death I will not fear HARM or EVIL for you walk with me.”
  2. The Lord walks every believer across that high golden bridge and during this walk from life to eternal life neither Satan nor his Demons or any other opposition from the satanic world can ever tough the believe when he is under dying Grace.
- G. Dying Grace then is the blessing of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God **Ps 116:15**
- H. Dying grace is the bridge between the blessings of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and Surpassing Grace Blessings **Heb 11:13** links the Super Grace blessings of Abraham **Heb 11:11-12**, with his surpassing grace blessings **Heb 11:9-10**
1. Paul is an illustration v7-8
- I. therefore the importance of the believer reaching Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace becomes the greatest issue with regard to Dying Grace **Phil 3:12-14**
1. We MUST move from Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace to Ultra Super Grace to enjoy totally the blessings of dying and the blessings of the “upward” station of surpassing grace.
- J. The relationship between Super Grace and Surpassing Grace is found in Dying Grace **Heb 11:13**
1. All mature believer recognize that they are transient on this earth and God has a special place for them in his kingdom.
- K. There are some exceptions to Dying Grace:
1. Disciplinary – the Sin Unto Death.
  2. Resurrection – for at least 1 generation of the Church Age transferring from time to eternity without Dying **1Cor 15:51-57, 1Thes 4:15-18**
- L. The best description of Dying Grace **Job 5:19-27**
- M. There are 4 great deliverances for the believer in Super Grace or Ultra Super Grace:
1. From Famine or Economic Depression
  2. From War from the power of the Sword
  3. From Gossip or the Scourge of the Tongue
    - i. Especially for the Ultra Super Grace believer and the more people malign and gossip about him the greater is his blessing.
  4. From Violent Death
  5. Job addresses the 2 worst as Economic Depression which causes people to die horribly and violent death from war or criminality as well but God will protect the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God from both of these and more.
  6. The believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace cannot ever die until the Lord is ready to take him and while he is alive the instruments of death or dangerous environment are not going to disturb him at all.
  7. The Super Grace and Ultra Super Grace believer will have a total Relaxed Mental Attitude during life and in death.
  8. There will be a perpetuation of Status Quo of Super Grace and Ultra Super Grace in the spiritual realm and when you depart as a believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God others will take your place to uphold history as a historical atlas of Super Grace believers.

9. The life of the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God will be absolutely the PERFECT length whether LONG or SHORT and the Lord decides the proper time and manner to transfer the believer from time to eternity.
10. It is imperative that we each understand DYING GRACE and all the blessings that God has for the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God during dying grace.

**Job 5:19-27**

v19: From six troubles, crises, catastrophes or disasters, he will deliver, preserve or rescue you by your concentrated thinking and applying Bible Doctrine, mature Believer in Super-Grace status, furthermore in seven the evil of satanic Doctrine will not meddle with nor touch nor produce its desired effect on you, as long as you are insulated by Bible Doctrine.

v20: In famine, depression or economic disaster he will redeem or deliver or purchase or preserve you, Mature Believers, from death from Eternity Past, in war or military disaster from the power of the sword in battle,

v21: you will be protected and hidden by the Integrity of God, delivered from the lash or scourge of the tongue in social disasters from maligning, judging and gossip, neither will you be afraid being unable to think under the pressures of destruction, violent death, ruin, oppression, tyranny, when it comes because of Dying Grace.

v22: You will relax and laugh with great capacity for life and a sense of humor from Relaxed Mental Attitude from Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and maximum relationship with the Integrity of God, at violent physical death and at economic depression because of dying grace and super grace status in time, neither will you be afraid of wild animals or violent death nor any dangerous instruments of death because of maximum Adjustment to the Justice of God.

v23: For your contract will be with the stones of the battlefield the artillery or bombs or missiles or other weapons of destruction of the military, and the wild animals of the field which kill man like conventional weapons will be at peace with you and pass you by, or will not destroy you until the Lord is ready for you to die,

v24: Therefore you have already learned and will know that your human body is in a state of prosperity and peace while dying (Mature believers in Z Radical die with minimum pain) and you will visit with great pleasure your home in heaven and not fear forfeit of your rewards or blessings

v25: And You will also know from application of Bible Doctrine that your descendants will be prosperous and the pivot great and that the Human Race will continue on and be able to adjust to your death and the nation perpetuated and your spiritual offspring shall be as the grass or young shoots of the field from blessing by association and historical impact.

v26: You will come to your grave in full vigor at the peak of your life for the mature believer at the perfect time to die, like a shock of corn comes in its season as the Timing and Plan of God in Grace are perfect.

v27: Behold this doctrine of Death and Dying Grace, we have researched, investigated and studied it, having the principle and experience of it, this is the point of it, CONCENTRATE, learn, inculcate into your soul and know it applying it for yourself for your own good.

N. Even as Paul has said that **Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ will be glorified in his person having reached Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Ultra Super Grace whether he is living or dying.**

1. Dying Grace means for the one involved that beyond physical death there is GREATER and GREATER blessing and profit in eternity.

**2Tim 4:6**

v6: For you see even now, EMPHATICALLY, I, Paul, an Ultra Super Grace believer, am already being poured out as a libation during this process of dying grace; this time under dying grace on this earth, of my striking the tent, hoisting the anchor, being unyoked from life, being released, my departure from life is standing by, at hand, imminent.

**Lesson #93      Series # 469      4/5/2019      2Tim 4:7**

- I. The Resume of the greatest believer in Human History:
  - A. Paul here is saying that he has fought as in a military campaign in his life in his part of the Angelic Conflict a desperate fight with all available spiritual weapons.
    1. This does not mean that Paul never failed in his life as we know he fell into reversionism we call the "Jerusalem reversionism" and prior to his Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God he was the greatest sinner ever to be.
  - B. Paul like any other believer who has moved ahead in his life to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace or Ultra Super Grace looks back on his life and says NO REGRETS.

1. *The Grace Plan of God takes care of all failures in the life of the believer in Super Grace or Ultra Super Grace.*

- C. The life of Paul as a believer in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ is described as honorable and noble.
1. Paul has recovered from his Jerusalem reversionism but has moved again to the position of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and has pressed on to Ultra Super Grace.
  2. Not only was Paul a spiritual atlas for his own generation in history but is a stabilizing rod in all subsequent generations of Human History.
  3. He has reached Super Grace and moved on to Ultra Super Grace and will not finish his life under the principle of dying grace.
  4. Paul fulfilled every concept of tactical victory in the Angelic Conflict and has done everything ever to be required of the Human Race in the Plan of God and done is better than everyone else with the possible exception of Moses.
- D. Paul is now saying that he has finished or completed or carried out all parts of the expectations of his spiritual and physical life.
1. When Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ said “it is finished” he in fact said “tetelestai” which is the exact word in the exact same tense Paul is using here and which means literally, “completed, carried out” but there would be results occurring FOREVER.
  2. On the cross at the end of the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ he had provided all aspects of what we need for our salvation and these results have gone on for over 2000 years and will continue to the end of Human History.
  3. Paul using this exact same word and is referring to his life on this earth and has accomplished everything set out for him to do in Eternity Past in the Divine Decree.
  4. No only has he accomplished it but done it very well and the results of his accomplishment will go on for the rest of Human History into eternity because they are recorded in the Pauline Epistles of the Scripture.
  5. Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ used the perfect passive voice indicating that SALVATION potential for all of the Human Race had RECEIVED completion.
  6. Paul used the ACTIVE voice because he is producing the action himself.
  7. The way Paul is using this word indicates the ABSOLUTE QUINTESENCE of CONFIDENCE that his not only is his life is over and the only thing remaining is the 3 remaining months of dying grace blessings but he has completed everything needed of him by God and the results will go on from AD68 to the end of the Millennium and even into eternity.
- E. At Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God Paul took his mark on the TRACK for the race of life and he has completed the race of his life and crossed the finish line and is under Dying Grace.
1. He is about to die and his work is completed in an honorable and noble manner.
- F. Paul here again emphasizes the completion of his function in Guarding and Preserving the inestimably valued Metabolized Bible Doctrine in his Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and has accumulated more Bible Doctrine than any other believer in this life with the exception of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ himself.
1. The preservation of this doctrine is what has led to the dynamics of his life and this is HISTORICAL reality.
  2. This is the written testimony of the greatest Ultra Super Grace believer in history and it belongs ONLY to the Super Grace or Ultra Super Grace believers and indicates that after having lived an entire lifetime and faced every disaster life can offer and having undergone more suffering that anyone underwent before him he ends his life with GREAT confidence. **2Cor 11**

3. Most people fall apart under pressure and disaster and have not confidence in this life or the end of this life and constantly look for someone to tell them WHY GOD LET THIS HAPPEN TO THEM.
4. Paul here has total confidence in his dying statements and there is no complaints and this comes only from a person who has maxed his function under the principle of the Grace Apparatus for Perception.
5. NO greater confidence regarding LIFE, DEATH and ETERNITY exists anywhere in a dying statement that this one.

## II. The Anticipation of Surpassing Grace Rewards

- A. Paul as a dying man can look to heaven and salute and embrace his eternal rewards with TOTAL confidence.
  1. In eternity NOTHING can EVER be lost.
  2. There is nothing of value which can ever be destroyed or removed in eternity and you will always have it and will always enjoy it and there is no way to ever possibly LOSE any of it.
  3. People get very distracted in life and always are losing something and totally distracted in life.
  4. No one in heaven will be running around trying to find what you lost and cannot find.
  5. Hell can be pictured as some woman losing her earring and 40,000 people running about trying to find it among the flames.
- B. Paul always managed to keep calm and relaxed about everything in life more than anyone who ever lived.
  1. Coming down to the end of his life he can look back and say confidently that there are no regrets.
  2. No only did he have NO regrets about his LIFE but he could turn away from life and look toward heaven in anticipation of his unimaginable blessings waiting for him in eternity which would be with him forever and never lost.
- C. Most of the time people are taking things which they value and enjoy and would like to have them around so they can see them and enjoy them but they cannot since they must HIDE them so that they do not get stolen in a robbery.
  1. This is not the case in eternity but is just a bad time in our history where crime is uncontrollable due to the bleeding heard liberal thinking which his making everything in life worse.
  2. The liberals are and have been in control for some time passing all the IDIOTIC laws and the idiot liberals are electing more idiot liberals who make more idiotic laws that make it impossible to function properly in life in any area.
  3. Every liberal is an expert in what the world needs and as soon as they get any chance to put into effect what he thinks the world needs it becomes instantly a MUCH WORSE place in which to live.
  4. FREEDOM is the one thing which liberals seem to ignore and despise and as a result they have the wrong Scale of Values.
  5. Therefore people are laying up, hiding or storing things away from others.
- D. Paul is stating that he has confidence that in the future there is reserved for him a Wreath of the HIGHEST possible decoration for his Status Quo of Ultra Super Grace and it will perpetually existing in Eternity.
  1. Paul will in fact have 3 fantastic decorations to wear around his head.
  2. Paul here is indicating that the one thing which is MORE important than every other thing imaginable which he will have in heaven and he will be able to wear it around his head for all eternity.

3. This Wreath is the decoration which more than everything else will forever throughout all eternity glorify Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ beyond anything else you will see in heaven ever.
  4. There will be similar wreaths worn by Moses, Jeremiah, and a few others in all of history.
  5. This wreath will be breathtaking in its glamour and beauty and will give anyone who sees it an INSTANT response of Glorifying Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
  6. It indicates that the wearer of such a wreath during his time on this earth glorified Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ more than his contemporary believers and more than any other believers with few exceptions in all generations.
  7. The thing which gives the greatest pleasure to the wearer and viewer is this highest of all decorations directly related to Bible Doctrine NEVER TO WORKS and which gives a correct perspective of Heaven.
  8. Of all the things in heaven which we could have the thing which is the most glorious, attractive, stimulating is the WREATH and the wearing of it does not glorify Paul or any other Super Grace or Ultra Super Grace believer but GLORIFIES Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
  9. The Wreath mentioned here is not the HIGHEST one but very close to it.
- E. This decoration for the Ultra Super Grace believer will always be in eternity.
1. This decoration and many others will be distributed to all believers at the Judgment Seat of Jesus Christ when we receive our OER for our function in time.
  2. This decoration mentioned here will be worn by the Ultra Super Grace believer in his Resurrection Body for all eternity.
  3. This will be a select group of veterans of the Angelic Conflict who will be wearing these wreaths but the TRAGEDY of even mentioning this decoration is that there really is NO excuse for any one of us as believers to NOT be wearing it ourselves.
  4. This decoration and others are open to any believers in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ in history and we should never have an inferiority complex and it is ONLY our attitude toward Bible Doctrine which determines whether we will receive it or NOT!
- F. This decoration is worn to glorify Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ but does not show here that accompanying it will be VAST areas of the New Universe which will be under these believers control.
1. For every decoration received under surpassing grace there are other rewards which are not mentioned which are beyond imagination and which will make eternity absolutely fantastic.
  2. There is therefore great advantage in the glorification of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and for the recipient as well here Paul.
- G. This Wreath mentioned here is the Wreath of Righteousness.

**2Tim 4:7**

**v7: I have desperately fought with all my spiritual weapons in the campaign of the Angelic Conflict, that noble, honorable fight of combat, seizing and holding the high ground of Super-Grace and Ultra Super-Grace, I have finished, carried out or completed the race course of life in the past and not left anything unfinished and have no regrets of any kind, I have Guarded and retained therefore, preserved that which is believed, the inestimably valued Bible Doctrine resident in my Stream of Consciousness of the Soul, maintaining the High Ground of Ultra Super-Grace**

**Lesson #94      Series # 469      4/7/2019      2Tim 4:8**

- I. Paul's Resume and Future Outlook continued:
  - A. The WREATH
    1. This wreath is a high decoration put around the head of the Roman soldier who was a top war hero.
      - i. It was also used for a WREATH given to those athletes who won in the Games but not here.

- ii. This is ABSOLUTELY NOT a crown of a king and there is only one king in the Christian Way of Life and that is Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ the King of Kings
- 2. At the time of writing the Roman Soldier was recipient of all sorts of decorations for his service and valor which moved up the body in their placement and included:
  - i. Arm Band of Bronze and Silver and occasionally Gold
    - a. Equal to the Bronze and Silver Star
  - ii. Campaign “Coins” worn on the Leather Strap across the chest during Parades.
    - a. They are equivalent to our campaign ribbons.
    - b. They had a picture of a Roman emperor or general with the name and date of the campaign like the Boy Scout Merit Badges.
  - iii. Necklace Decorations worn around the neck.
    - a. These were equivalent to the service crosses, Distinguished service, Navy, Air Force, Army, etc.
  - iv. The Silver Spear was carried like a combat infantryman’s badge of our army.
  - v. The Highest decoration worn around the head, the WREATH.
    - a. This is equivalent to the Medal of Honor and other nations highest decorations.
- 3. This was a system of decorations where the highest decoration was worn highest on the head.
  - i. The (gr) STEPHANOS == the (lat) == Civic Crown, (gr) == Wreath

B. The Wreath of Righteousness:

- 1. This is not for miss goody two shoes or little Lord Fauntleroy and does not require being a very good little boy or girl in the Christian Way of Life.
- 2. (gr) Dikaiosune == (gr) sune == abstract connotation making this a technical term.
  - i. This denotes here fulfilling a divine objective or statute.
  - ii. Plato used (gr) Sophrosune being for reasonableness, very smart or advancing in mentality
  - iii. This is used here as Plato used it for the concept of advancing in righteousness.
  - iv. You advance in righteousness, fulfilling the divine objectives and statutes by advancing in THOUGHT from epignosis Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
  - v. We generally think of Righteousness as something you do or how you behave or something you do not do but this is not the way it is used in scripture.
  - vi. In abstract Greek thought Dikaiosune is used for ADVANCE in THINKING bringing advance in the Spiritual Life.
  - vii. In other words under the concept of Dikaiosune the smartest person in a group would be the most righteous.
  - viii. This means to be righteous in terms of being smart having advance in thinking.
- 3. In the New Testament Scripture Dikaiosune is used for fulfilling EVERY divine objective which God has established for the believer in time by advancing in thinking from maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
  - i. This is total fulfillment of the objectives of the Spiritual Life and only means “righteousness” in terms of being a believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.
  - ii. Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God requires therefore, maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
  - iii. Dikaiosune is therefore fulfillment of the responsibility of the Royal Family of God on earth whereby the believer advances to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God by consistent Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine reaching Super Grace and going on to Ultra Super Grace.

- iv. Technically here it is used for the believer here in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and there is another decoration for the believer in Ultra Super Grace.
- C. There are 3 highest decorations for the believer in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ:
1. The only comparable decorations are the Wehrmacht Knights Cross of the Iron Cross
    - i. Knights Cross of the Iron Cross with Crossed Swords
    - ii. Knights Cross of the Iron Cross with Oak Leaves
    - iii. Knights Cross of the Iron Cross with Crossed Swords, Oak Leaves & Diamonds.
  2. This is also true of the WREATHS of decorations cited here:
    - i. Stephanos of Righteousness (gr) Dikaiousune == for ANY believer reaching Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace. **2Tim 4:7-8**
      - a. All believers who reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and HOLDS in this Status Quo will wear this wreath for all eternity.
      - b. This is for the Church Age Royal Family of God only
    - ii. Stephanos of Life == for ANY believers reaching Ultra Super Grace **James 1:12, Rev 2:10**
      - a. All Ultra Super Grace believer will have both of these Wreaths to wear.
      - b. This is as high as any believer can go in decorations and they mean incredible vast expanses of space to control with cities by the thousands.
      - c. Also great reward in heaven.
      - d. These decorations will ALWAYS be worn in heaven and be an eternal memorial to glorification of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
      - e. This is only for the Church Age Royal Family of God only
      - f. The Ultra Super Grace believer will know that he is going to get this as a decoration for eternity because there will be a MANTLE of opposition from satanic forces on this earth in this life which accompanies the position of being in Ultra Super Grace and demands the believer receive the Stephanos of Life for eternity.
      - g. This mantle will have all the people who do not like you and despise you and oppose you because of maximum maturity attainment.
      - h. These are the forces of the satanic system of EVIL for this earth and include all angelic and human activities within evil directed against you.
      - i. For this believer the MORE he is pressured the greater will be his blessing and happiness.
      - j. This is the greatest place to be in life for any believer since there will be great opposition but it will be based on the incredible spiritual advance and victory which has been attained and the more it intensifies the greater will be the happiness and blessing.
      - k. A believer has not lived in Ultra Super Grace until he has about 40 people who despise him so much that they turn colors if he is within 100 yards of them.
      - l. God just takes these and makes them into a nice decoration and hangs this around the neck of the Ultra Super Grace believer.
      - m. This is a bit higher than the Stephanos of Righteousness
    - iii. Stephanos of Glory == is ONLY for the communicator believer in the Church Age both Apostles and Pastor Teachers who brings any believer in his congregation to Super Grace or Ultra Super Grace
      - a. This is in essence for a lifetime of dedication and faithfulness for studying and teaching Bible Doctrine.
      - b. No pastor can ever LEAD anyone past his own point of spiritual progress.

- c. Some Pastor Teachers will have all 2 of these and some all 3 wreaths
  - d. The rewards for these categories of believers will be absolutely incomprehensible until we reach eternity.
- 3. These give us a bit of an understanding of what things will be like in heaven.
  - i. Decorations are to be worn and the WEARING of these decorations glorify Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ for all eternity.
  - ii. However most people have not comprehension of these things especially the decorations which will be available for all advancing believer and how wearing them presenting them when about in heaven is what glorifies Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
  - iii. Plugging along with Bible Doctrine is what causes spiritual growth and with maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul the spiritual growth brings the believer to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and this is FULFILLMENT of the DIVINE objectives of the Spiritual Life.
  - iv. Most believer however have no idea that this is what is needed for spiritual growth and get on the bandwagon of WORKING for God to improve their image in his sight.
- 4. Paul is the greatest believer in the Church Age and is a 3 wreath man but he only mentions the first category of Wreaths because he is encouraging the Super Grace believer in this writing to Timothy.
- 5. WE each will have our total life evaluated by the Lord God Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ at the Judgment Seat of Jesus Christ in order to remove all Human Good since there will be no Old Sin Nature and no Human Good in heaven.
  - i. Many things which we have done in sincerity and even those the bible commands us to do but which we had done in the energy of the flesh without the Filling of God the Holy Spirit will be destroyed in front of us AND EVERYONE ELSE THERE.
  - ii. Heaven is a TOTAL GRACE concept
  - iii. This is why THINKING is so much more important than DOING since the DOING can only be correct when the THINKING is straight and comes from maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
- 6. These decorations and many which we have not been privy to know or understand will be AWARDED to advancing believers and those who reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and Ultra Super Grace **Rom 14:10, 2Cor 5:10, 2Tim 2:12, Heb 6:7-12**
  - i. This is dogmatic reality and EACH of us as believers will be facing Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ at the Judgment Seat of Jesus Christ and will be personally evaluated for the time we have spent on earth between our Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God and DEATH.
  - ii. All Human Good will be brought out and BURNED and if at that time we have advanced in the Spiritual Life and/or reached Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace or Ultra Super Grace we will receive decorations and assignments to our portions of heaven along with other indescribable rewards for our level of advancement.
- 7. The Judgment Seat of Jesus Christ is not in the immediate future for any of us but relatively distant future.
  - i. This is a time period in heaven co-terminus with the tribulation on earth.
  - ii. ALL believers in the Church Age who reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and Ultra Super Grace will be there for evaluation and awarding of decorations.



8. (gr) Agapao == Strong Mental Love not an emotional love.
  - i. It's development beyond this must come from Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and is a love fed by the mentality of the soul.
  - ii. Human Love when one falls in love with another the other appeals to the Eye, Smell, Ear of the one in love.
  - iii. This is the means of Empiricism gathering information about another person and during this first phase of attraction it most likely never occurs to the one falling in love that the other may or may not have a brain.
  - iv. When men are first attracted to a woman their first attraction is not her BRAIN and you will never find a BRAIN MAN!!!!
  - v. This is why it is so difficult to understand LOVING God since to Love God you must be a BRAIN man!
  - vi. With God there is nothing to see or hear or smell and all great lovers of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ must become a BRAIN lover and the only way to do this is to put maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine into your Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
  - vii. Therefore this is ONLY the believer who has reached Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace or moved on to Ultra Super Grace.
  - viii. The more Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul the more you can LOVE Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
  - ix. If you have maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul it is inevitable that you will love Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and you can tell this during communion you will think of nothing else.
  - x. You learn Bible Doctrine by concentration and then with this Metabolized Bible Doctrine in your Stream of Consciousness of the Soul at a communion service there will be nothing more meaningful to you than Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
  - xi. Any believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace or Ultra Super Grace has Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ
  - xii. First we love Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ in his person as a result of knowing him from Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul then we begin to love things associated with him.
  - xiii. When you finally come to Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ Category I Love for him you then begin to learn things about him and his activities and as a result you come to love that moment when you will see him face to face in our Resurrection Body at the Judgment Seat of Jesus Christ.
    - a. We will also see him face to face when we die and our soul goes to be with him.
9. The Wreaths are reserved as the HIGHEST decorations for the believers who reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace.
  - i. This is ONLY part of the DECORATION and there will also be included many other aspects of reward along with the overt decoration.
  - ii. We will wear the decoration but the PAYOFF will be owning or controlling vast areas of space.
  - iii. When we wear the Wreath decoration this signifies that we will OWN and control vast areas of the universe.
  - iv. Therefore the CROWNS do not express all that goes along with the decoration and the CROWN or WREATH does not express all the variations of decorations which will be available to believers and it is only the highest decoration for the believer who goes the whole route to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace.

D. Doctrine of Surpassing Grace

1. Nomenclature Problems:

- i. When possible nomenclature should be related to the concepts and literal translations of passages.
- ii. Eph 2:7 in the literal translation has Surpassing Grace as a part of it.

**Eph 2:7**

**v7: That, in the approaching Ages of the eternal future, He, God, might demonstrate his surpassing grace riches in generosity toward us who are in Christ Jesus.**

- iii. Super Grace is also taken from the bible directly. James 4:6
- iv. Surpassing Grace is the optimum in spiritual achievement and maximum in blessing and reward and the Ultimate in glorifying Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and God forever.
- v. It connotes something beyond Super Grace and also beyond time.
- vi. The road to glory includes:
  - a. Saving Grace to Living or Logistical Grace
  - b. Logistical Grace to Super Grace
  - c. Super Grace to Dying Grace or Ultra Super Grace
  - d. Ultra Super Grace to Dying Grace
  - e. Dying Grace to Surpassing Grace.
2. There are 2 special blessing paragraphs in the word of God, above and beyond the normal blessings of the Spiritual Life.
  - i. Super Grace Blessing Package of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God distributed in Time == SGII == Super Grace in Phase II Time.
  - ii. Surpassing Grace blessings and rewards for Eternity == SGIII == Surpassing Grace in Phase III Eternity.
  - iii. Life's Phases:
    - a. Phase I is LIFE starting at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God
    - b. Phase II begins instantly after faith in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ alone then as a believer after Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God to the departure of the believer from this life.
    - c. Phase III begins instantly at the point of physical death and therefore is a believer in Eternity.
  - iv. Review the Super Grace Blessing Package in 5 Categories
  - v. Rewards for Eternity as Surpassing Grace Blessings
    - a. This is reward above and beyond Ultimate Sanctification which NOT a reward but a blessing designed for ALL believers which provides them with a Resurrection Body minus the Old Sin Nature and minus Human Good.
    - b. All believers without regard to their Status Quo as a believer no matter how good or how bad a believer they may have been in this life.
    - c. This BEATS having the body of corruption in the Lake of Fire forever.
    - d. This is not a special blessing but one which is common for all believers and having the Resurrection Body does not distinguish one believer from any other.
    - e. The DISTINCTION among believers will come in Decorations and Rewards and the PAYOFF for each.
    - f. Therefore surpassing grace blessings are above and beyond ultimate sanctification and there will be a DISCERNIBLE difference between believers in eternity.

- g. Once you have this information regarding the differences between believers in eternity you have to be TRULY STUPID to stop taking in Bible Doctrine and advancing in the Spiritual Life.
- h. Eternity is not like this life, but it is forever and ever and it is basically a static condition and there will be NO Moving up in rank once we get to eternity and it all depends on what is done in this life.
- i. We only live for a short time and even living for 100 years is NOTHING compared to existing ETERNALLY.
- j. Believers who may be intelligent can be very stupid if they ignore the reality of eternity and become disinterested in Bible Doctrine.

**2Tim 4:8**

v8: Beyond this time, in the future in Phase III of life, eternity, there is perpetually laid up, stored away, preserved or reserved for me to my advantage, a decoration wreath or medal of that 'Dikaiousune' righteousness of fulfillment of every divine objective or statute for the Royal Family of God and total fulfillment of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God spiritual progress to Super-Grace or onto Ultra Super-Grace to Dying Grace, which the Lord God Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ, the totally perfect, objective, incorruptible, divine, righteous, evaluator or judge knowing all the facts, will award to me on that day at the Judgment Seat of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ and not to me only but also to all those Super-Grace and Ultra Super-Grace believers who have loved, with maximum category I Love, his appearance at the Exanastasis or rapture of the church, having Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ in time.

**Lesson #95      Series # 469      4/13/2019      2Tim 4:9**

- I. Law and Order related to the Laws of Divine Establishment:
  - A. People are no longer are good Samaritans and no longer try to help others because we live in a litigiousness society and you can have a terrible difficult time just for trying to help people.
    - 1. This is the result of our society suffering from a very bad case of reversionism and it is WAY WAY beyond this today in 2019.
  - B. Article: Chicago Daily News, 11 Dec 1975.
    - 1. A young man get beaten by 15 other young men and when he tries to get the police to do something they do nothing and the DA does nothing and when he finally is told to get all the names of all the men who beat him he finds the leader and in the ensuing argument punches him and gets himself arrested for felony assault and was at that time pending trial.
    - 2. It shows that a single persistent individual can with not much effort HANG HIMSELF.
- II. Doctrine of Surpassing GRACE Continued:
  - A. There will be in eternity a VAST distinction between those who have Resurrection Bodies under ultimate sanctification
  - B. Definition:
    - 1. Surpassing GRACE is the status of special blessing and reward in eternity for the believer who reaches Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace or Ultra Super Grace
      - i. These rewards are above and beyond the Resurrection Body.
    - 2. It is the Status Quo above and beyond ultimate sanctification
    - 3. it is the ultimate in regenerate mankind glorifying God forever and the decorations are to be accompanied by great rewards of rulership and status.
      - i. This is called in the bible, ruling 10 or 100 cities, and reflects glory to Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ forever.
  - C. The Judgment Seat of Jesus Christ is the basis for the administration of surpassing grace blessing and reward. **2Cor 5:10**
    - 1. This is the place where every believer will receive his Efficiency Rating for his life in time from Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God to death.
      - i. Phase I == Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God
      - ii. Phase II == Believer in Time

- iii. Phase III == Believer in Eternity.
  - 2. When the rapture of the church occurs and the Royal Family of God receives their Resurrection Bodies there will be an evaluation of performance as a believer in time.
  - 3. The evaluation is performed by Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ at the Judgment Seat of Jesus Christ
  - 4. The evaluation covers the time between Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God and Transfer to Eternity.
    - i. This is the time when the reversionist has nothing to show for their life as a believer and will be Peons for all eternity.
    - ii. This is also the time when the believers who reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace or beyond will have phenomenal decorations which will glorify Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ forever.
  - 5. This evaluation is not to be based on your human efforts, abilities or talents but on your progress in the Spiritual Life.
    - i. This in essence is based totally on your attitude toward Bible Doctrine.
    - ii. The principle of Growth is based on the amount of Bible Doctrine in your own Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and the application of this Bible Doctrine to your experiences.
    - iii. In addition it is also the use of Bible Doctrine under the principle of balance of residence between the Filling of God the Holy Spirit and Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
  - 6. In **2Cor 5:10** “accomplishment” refers to spiritual growth not human efforts or works.
    - i. In addition “good” refers to reaching Status Quo of Super Grace or Ultra Super Grace and “Worthless” refers to being in Status Quo reversionism being under the influence of evil and accumulating in your life only Human Good.
  - 7. The Judgment Seat of Jesus Christ is the Royal Family of God point of Efficiency Rating.
    - i. Those believers who reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and beyond have incredible rewards in eternity along with special blessings and decorations we call Paragraph SGIII or Surpassing Grace blessings for Eternity.
    - ii. Those believer who fail to reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and in fact make NO spiritual progress beyond Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God because of life in reversionism will suffer LOSS of special surpassing grace blessings and minus their Paragraph SG III for eternity.
    - iii. They will along with ALL believers, the Good, the BAD, and the Ugly believers ALL will have Ultimate Sanctification of a Resurrection Body Minus the Old Sin Nature and Minus all Human Good.
- D. The believer in reversionism can lose his Super Grace and Surpassing Grace blessings but this does not include nor imply loss of his eternal salvation. **2Tim 2:11-16**
  - 1. Review Super Grace Blessing Package and Surpassing Grace Blessing Package.
  - 2. Those who fail to receive their Super Grace blessing package will also fail to receive their surpassing grace blessings.
- E. The Judgment Seat of Jesus Christ totally eliminates any necessity for judging or maligning any other believer. **Rom 14:10**
  - 1. The only person who has any right to judge any believer is the Pastor Teacher of the local church and this is not extended to anyone else in the local church.
  - 2. In any congregation there is ONE Pastor Teacher and some delegated authority from the Pastor Teacher to the Board of Deacons and this to be the basic organization of any local church.
  - 3. Deacons do not make policy but are administrators.

4. The Pastor Teacher is the absolute AUTHORITY in the local church and is the policy maker and his policy is established by his consistent teaching of Bible Doctrine.
5. He delegates administrative functions to deacons so that there can be good administration and the larger the local church the more administrators are needed and this also gives proper time for the Pastor Teacher to study in order to prepare for teaching.
6. Then there is the congregation and in the congregation there are a variety of believers in a variety of spiritual Status Quos.
  - i. New infant believers
  - ii. Adolescent Believers
  - iii. Mature Believers
  - iv. All are mixed in together in the congregation.
  - v. All the believers are all in different stages of spiritual growth and make contact with each other every time the congregation comes together and all have differing personalities along with their varied levels of spiritual growth.
  - vi. In every area of life they have vast differences in their thinking and personalities and functions in life and there are many natural personality conflicts in any congregation.
  - vii. Considering that all are believers in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and part of the Royal Family of God and all possess Eternal Life and are all in different stages of spiritual growth this again presents the potential for conflict.
  - viii. The infant believers cannot understand the mature believers, the Adolescent believers cannot understand either the infant or the mature believers and Mature believers cannot understand the Adolescent believers but can understand the infant believers.
  - ix. There can be conflicts between individuals for a myriad of reasons but when they get into a local church they all instantly become experts concerning what GOD wants everyone to do and therefore conflicts can arise for many reasons.
  - x. The tendency for believers in a local church is to forget that we all come from different walks of life and backgrounds and many things which we are critical about in others are simply our own personal standards which may or may not be good.
  - xi. These standards however do not represent anything by any stretch of the imagination spirituality and some may even reflect the Local Taboos.
7. These passages like this are to cause us to realize that no 2 of us are in the same stage of spiritual growth and therefore there will OBVIOUSLY be differences in our lifestyle and how we think, act and dress and also at different times in our Spiritual Life.
  - i. The reason why God set up the local church was NOT to create a lonely hearts club but to bring all these varied people together under the principle of Privacy of the Priesthood as part of the Royal Family of God.
  - ii. In the local church it is no one's business as to your phone number, where you live, what you do for a living but ONLY that you came to LEARN Bible Doctrine and have a right to do it without anyone violating your privacy in any way whether it is GOOD or BAD.
  - iii. It is not an unacceptable practice for the Pastor Teacher to THROW individuals out of the local church for sticking their nose into other people's business.
  - iv. The only thing which is important in the local church is the believer's Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine and Gossip, Maligning and Judging are totally out of line.
    - a. Gossip is assigning to someone else SINS whether they did them or not.
    - b. Maligning is a Synonym for Gossip.

- c. You may even have seen another person commit certain sins but this is still NOT the issue and the only sins you are to be concerned with are YOUR OWN.
  - d. Sin is between the believer and the Lord ONLY and resolved through the use of the rebound procedure PERSONALLY and INDIVIDUALLY.
  - e. These are sins which the other person may or many not have committed and this does not matter since someone is still talking about them.
  - f. This can occur with “prayer meetings” when some believers collect to pray for some other believer who has fallen by the wayside.
  - g. The minute sin is mentioned and a person is maligned and other engage in gossip about his fledged failures PRAYER cannot function.
  - h. Every believer has a right to Total Privacy and the Pastor Teacher and no one else has any need to know where he lives or what he does for a living or recreation etc.
  - i. Not the Pastor Teacher nor any other congregation member is to be holding a believers hand and telling him how to act and function in his life.
- v. Some believers being so very Self Righteous are in their own minds are so good that they are in fact HORRIBLE and SINFUL.
8. Judging Goes beyond Gossip and sins and includes Lifestyle or any other aspect of a persons being and life.
- i. Judging and gossip are technically different.
  - ii. We are not to judge because we have NO right to be critical of a fellow believer.
  - iii. However if you are an officer in some company and are in charge of personnel and about to recommend a person for advancement you have to know everything about that person and must in fact judge his qualifications for the advancement.
  - iv. In writing recommendations for people always be HONEST no matter what the effect will be on the other persons advancement.
  - v. Having any command function in any area of life means you must be a GOOD judge of people and be able to evaluate them.
  - vi. Judging is assigning sins or being critical of a persons lifestyle when it is NONE OF YOUR BUSINESS.
  - vii. This is the privacy of the priesthood. **Is 45:23**
9. EACH of us will give a personal account to God himself and we will have an opportunity of EXPLAINING OUR WHOLE CHRISTIAN LIFE TO THE LORD.
- i. The Lord will be the sole judge of it but he will actually have all the facts while we will have the opportunity to explain our position to the Lord.
  - ii. Since we have this opportunity to explain our own life we obviously do not need anyone else judging our life.
  - iii. The people who are truly relaxed are those who simply MIND their OWN business and the ones who are tense, jealous, vindictive, implacable etc can’t wait to criticize others.
10. No matter kind of person one is or what you do in life, you have just as much right to sin in a congregation and take in Bible Doctrine as anyone else without any regard to your past or your failures or how many you have killed etc., you have as much right to sit and listen to Bible Doctrine being taught without any people sticking their nose into your life.
- F. The daily function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception and Filling of God the Holy Spirit is the key to reaching Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace.
- 1. This includes advance from infancy to adulthood and to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and event to Ultra Super Grace and on to Dying Grace.

2. This advance is the basis for blessing and reward in eternity under the surpassing grace blessing package which requires reaching Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace.

James 1:25, 2:12-13,

3. This passage in James is the beginning of the importance of function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception and of getting Metabolized Bible Doctrine into your Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
  - i. The intake of Bible Doctrine is the basis of spiritual growth and NOT what you do and you grow by absorption of Bible Doctrine not by what you do.

G. Analogy to the Judgment Seat of Jesus Christ Heb 6:7-12

1. This emphasizes the importance of Bible Doctrine being transferred from the pages of scripture to the soul of the believer.
2. The Ground Here is the believer under Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine.
3. Drinking the Rain is the taking in Bible Doctrine from constant teaching and constant function of the believer under the Grace Apparatus for Perception.
4. The Harvest or Crops is the receipt of the blessing in the Super Grace Package the growth of the believer is used by the trinity to provide such blessings from the source of God.
5. Thorns represent the satanic genius of evil and Thistles refer here to reversionism.
6. The end of reversionism is the burning of thorns and thistles at the Judgment Seat of Jesus Christ.
7. It is the job also of every believer with the spiritual gift of Pastor Teacher to reach and exceed Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.
8. The one's who through Bible Doctrine and persistence in learning Bible Doctrine will inherit the promises of Surpassing Grace Blessings.

H. Wreaths called Crowns are the highest decorations in eternity. **Review from Lesson 94**

1. These are only given to believers who reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and / or moving on to Ultra Super Grace.
2. There are 3 categories of WREATHS or STEPHANOS found in the New Testament Scripture are worn on the head as a decoration.
3. Decorations were much more meaningful in the time of writing of the New Testament Scripture than they are today.
  - i. Each decoration meant an increase in the amount of Pay for the soldier
  - ii. The highest decorations also meant receiving thousands of acres of land and even hundreds of thousands of dollars as reward.
    - a. See the History of Spurious Ligetinous a 22 year Roman officer who received 6 of these highest wreaths and over 34 decorations and was one of the richest men in Rome.
    - b. To have one of these made a man wealthy for life and he had 6 of these and more.
  - iii. Julius Caesar had one of these wreaths as a decoration and won a title of Emperor having been a commander when he won the wreath.
  - iv. These wreaths are a fantastic way to explain and illustrate the highest decoration which a believer can receive in the Christian Way of Life.
  - v. All believers who reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace or Ultra Super Grace will receive at least 1 of these wreaths.
4. The 3 categories of Wreaths: Review above
5. These decorations give us an idea of what Paul thought about certain believers who had reached Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and moving on.
  - i. Paul as the great apostle he was had the whole world as his congregation but the Philippians were one of his favorite groups of mature believers.

- ii. He writes to them who were all positive to Bible Doctrine **Phil 4:1** that his happiness was related to them along with his victory wreath or Stephanos.

**1Thes 2:19-20, 1Pet 5:4, 1Cor 3:14-15**

- iii. The Thessalonian believers were very positive always to Bible Doctrine also and he tells them that THEY are his confidence of receiving the highest decoration for the communicator and the source of his happiness as positive believers.
- iv. The happiness of the communicator of Bible Doctrine is based on the Positive Volition of the congregation and they are the source also of his GLORY the wreath of Glory when they reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and Ultra Super Grace.

I. The Highest Decoration for the Old Testament Scripture believers:

- 1. Cities were used to designate rewards in eternity for the Old Testament Scripture believers.

**Heb 11:9-16+**

- i. All the members of the family of Abraham who reached Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God, Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob did not receive in time their surpassing grace blessings but understood the promise of them and embraced them and knew they were strangers in the land.

**Heb 11:23, Acts 7:20**

- 2. Moses also knew he was in for fantastic eternal decorations as well.
  - i. His parents saw that he was an infant PERTAINING to or ASSOCIATED with a CITY indicating that they saw immediately that the rewards of eternity would be his.
  - ii. As a result they wanted him to be alive and were not afraid of the edict of the Pharaoh.
  - iii. Even at the point of his birth it was recognized that in the divine decree God the Father looked forward and saw the life of Moses and the direction it would take and set up this fantastic reward for him.
- 3. There will be many decorations for the Old Testament Scripture Ultra Super Grace believers for eternity and the central decoration is mentioned in **Rev 21:2, 10-11**
  - i. This is the city set aside above the earth for these Ultra Super Grace believers.

J. The believer in any dispensation or generation of history who reached Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God will have phenomenal decorations.

- 1. The decorations in themselves simply indicates that the individual who possesses them has in time in his life GLORIFIED Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
  - i. There are 2 clearly defined decorations for the major dispensations, Stephanos for the New Testament Scripture believers and Cities for the Old Testament Scripture believers who reach or exceed Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.
- 2. For the Old Testament Scripture believer he will have a CITY as a decoration and even in the time of the Roman empire the city of Philippi was awarded to a group of retired Roman officers as their very own city they having served so gallantly for Rome.
- 3. The wreath is also such as symbol of service for the New Testament Scripture believer.
- 4. THESE wreaths and cities as symbols of decorations do not begin to explain ALL of the possible decorations for believers or the accompanying happiness and blessings which will go along with them.
- 5. The city and wreath concept obviously is ONLY for a select few not everyone.
- 6. These SOME will be in the HIGHEST social echelon of eternity while the lowest echelon will be those who have their Resurrection Body minus the Old Sin Nature minus Human Good and NOTHING else.
- 7. All will be happy but not in the same category of the highest social echelon.



8. There WILL be many in between but it has not been discerned from scripture at this point.
9. What is not described are the various things we will do in eternity nor the things we will have in eternity and what we will enjoy in heaven.
10. These things are BEYOND human comprehension, our vocabulary and language for understanding them.
11. Often the description of heaven is based on NEGATIVE concepts of NO MORE sorrow, pain, tears, death, ETC., but this does not actually convey what is actually there which is to be so glorious and fantastic that human descriptions cannot handle expressing it.
12. In addition the Status Quo of the believer in heaven is so great that the focus would be on the FUN and be willing to do a lot of things simply on that basis.
13. The motivation for consistent Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine under the Grace Apparatus for Perception must be compatible with the entire principle and Plan of God which is GRACE.
14. Since GRACE is the principle and plan ALL motivations in the Christian Way of Life must be compatible with GRACE.
  - i. Often motivation deviates from grace in the Christian Way of Life when people try to be recognized for what they are doing and gain some influence over others and have more power etc.
  - ii. We cannot ever be motivated for self aggrandizement but as GRACE motivation to advance the Plan of God and purpose of God for the believer in the Spiritual Life.
  - iii. People who do things without compensation or minimal compensation must be motivated and it must be from Bible Doctrine
  - iv. This is the same problem we have with eternity and people in time get the wrong motivation and if we could describe and understand some of the detailed things we can have for eternity by simply reaching Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace it would be a serious problem of Motivation and people would only come to bible class in order to be assured of getting some of the blessings of time and eternity.
  - v. {(FF) This is something I have considered for a long time now, we have the vocabulary to describe God and his Essence but in fact if you are honest with yourself we cannot actually comprehend God.
    - a. Take these Examples and see if your mind your thinking can actually comprehend what they would be like.
      - i ) Omniscience
      - ii ) Omnipotence
      - iii ) Immutability
      - iv ) Perfection
    - b. If you are honest we have the words and understand the meanings but the REALITY of these concepts is so very far from being able to be comprehended.}
  - vi. The problem would be far reaching in the local church and would in fact destroy Bible Doctrine as the motivation for the Spiritual Life and substitute the FUN which we might get as a result of listening to Bible Doctrine.
  - vii. Motivation must line up with all Bible Doctrine but some people are simply out to GRAB one or more of the possible blessings available.
  - viii. The Pastor Teacher must in order to not be remiss in his duty of teaching Bible Doctrine present the decorations available to the believers who reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God

- a. The pastor has to explain that some believers like David were extremely wealthy early in life and that as an example David was the greatest general officer of his time and promoted again by God to be the greatest King of all time and when he went out in Operation Bathsheba in Adultery and fornication and MURDER of her husband HE DID NOT LOSE A SINGLE THING OF THESE BLESSINGS being a believer in Super Grace and under carnality but NOT in reversionism.
15. Motivation must return to the concepts of Super Grace package of blessing in the spiritual category of Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ, Sharing the Happiness of God, Capacity for all aspects of Life, Ability to cope with disaster along with historical and association blessings and dying blessings.
- i. We must never ever let our attention go to the BLESSINGS and away from the BLESSOR for when you lose track of the SOURCE of all blessings the Lord Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ then motivation will be distorted and wrong.
  - ii. We must focus on the blessing who provides all blessings for time and eternity and the blessings can come or go but the BLESSOR will always be there.
  - iii. Having reached Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and received our package of Super Grace blessings if we NOSE DIVE into reversionism we will lose the blessings but the BLESSOR and our relationship with him will always be there.
  - iv. Our relationship with the blessing is what counts and all the rest is icing on the cake and the important thing in our life is not WEALTH or SUCCESS but our relationship with the blessing.
  - v. The LORD delights in giving us these things for he does so totally apart from Satan and from using human systems of advancement in the devils world.
  - vi. It is a wonderful thing to see someone having and enjoying the best things in life all the time glorifying Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and their WEALTH glorifies Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ having been given it in grace as part of the grace blessing package apart from any function in this world.
  - vii. To get things in the world of Satan you have to scrounge and appease and be nice to people you don't even want to be around and go through the worst system imaginable.
  - viii. You cannot help in the world of the devil becoming a sycophant brown nosing someone above you while you are kicking someone in the head below you.
  - ix. This is totally incompatible with the Bible Doctrine you are getting in bible class and your motivation must be GRACE all the way.
- K. Once you understand that you are not to be motivated to acquire the pot of gold at the end of the rainbow you have to have something else to provide grace motivation which means you must also have the greatest asset possible in the human realm that being SELF DISCIPLINE.

**Lesson #96      Series # 469      4/15/2019      2Tim 4:9**

- I. Changing of Leadership of the church from Apostles to Pastor Teachers & Surpassing Grace Continued:
  - A. Change of Leadership occurred because the Canon of scripture was nearing completion and as a result the Canon was to be the only source of Bible Doctrine for the Pastor Teacher to teach from.
    - 1. There is to be in the Church Age ONLY the local church and the Pastor Teacher for communication of Bible Doctrine to at least 2 or 3 or more believers under a system of academic discipline and privacy.
  - B. The objective for the believer is to start at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God and receive the 39 irrevocable assets for the Spiritual Life and then move from this infancy as a believer to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God by means of constant and consistent

Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine under the Grace Apparatus for Perception and Filling of God the Holy Spirit.

1. The Objective is to reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and then MOVE ON to Ultra Super Grace and end this life with dying grace.

II. The Decorations for the Mature Believers for Eternity (review):

- A. There are going to be a myriad of decorations for believers in eternity but the bible only describes the HIGHEST decorations for the believer who has reached Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.
  1. These are the 3 Wreaths to be worn on the head (Review Above all the Roman Decorations).
  2. The Wreaths of Life, Righteousness and Glory.
- B. The analogy of Self Discipline as related to the rewards and decorations of Eternity **2Tim 2:5**
  1. It is the rules which set up the principle for the winner to succeed in the Games of the ancient world.
    - i. None of our athletes could ever make it to competition in their system of games.
    - ii. Their games required MAXIMUM self discipline.
  2. The Rules or Laws of the Gymnasium: **1Cor 9:24-27**
    - i. Entrance into a GYM of the State and you had to be a Roman citizen.
    - ii. Once you entered you would be in for 9 or 10 months and when you left the gym it would be ONLY to go to the games.
      - a. The Gym covered many acres and had a wall around it and was close to the huge stadium where the Games were Held.
      - b. This is analogous to Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God through faith in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
    - iii. Breaking any of the rules was grounds for removal from the gym and inability to compete in any of the games no matter how good you were.
    - iv. There were 2 athletes in the ancient world:
      - a. (gr) Agonistai == an amateur who went to the gym to improve health or get in better shape physically.
        - i ) This is often were many of the Homosexuals in Greece came from.
      - b. (gr) Athletai == A professional who was the most self disciplined persons in the Roman empire.
        - i ) These men could be anything they wanted in life after competition in the games because of their self discipline.
        - ii ) Every organization in Rome desired these men for their functions and they could always get the best highest paying jobs in Rome.
        - iii ) The discipline of the Gym was like that of West Point in 1936 very tough and very strict.
    - v. During the 9 to 10 months they remained in the gym and were not seen by anyone outside the gym.
    - vi. The Athlete had to live in the Gym for the whole 10 months and this is analogous to finding your right Pastor Teacher and sticking with his teaching of Bible Doctrine no matter what.
    - vii. During the time the athlete was in the gym for the 10 months he had to answer EVERY trumpet call.
      - a. In the gym there were living quarters and also a mess hall and acres of Exercise fields all over.
      - b. When the trumpet would sound about 6 times per day first a warning trumpet which gave the men 15 min to get ready and during this time their trainer would come to them and rub them down with OIL and a fine

- African sand since this was the only thing they could have on in the exercise field.
- c. No matter the weather these athletes had to exercise 6 times per day on the training fields NAKED in sun, rain, snow or whatever.
  - d. Each man had an assigned place and when on the field they all did the same exercises no matter what their competition area was.
  - e. Then toward the end of the day you had a chance to work out in your area of competition.
  - f. You could be eliminated from the gym for almost any trivial reason such as not putting out a full effort or loafing during exercises.
- viii. There was not food allowed except Wheat, Dried Meat, Cheese, Figs and WATER only when everyone everywhere drank wine.
  - ix. The athlete had to exercise under the direction of the exercise master in all kinds of weather and this is analogous to the stability needed in academic discipline and the importance of Positive Volition
    - a. No believer ever reaches Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God without maximum use of self and academic discipline
  - x. There is to be NO contact with anyone outside the gym especially women and he MUST avoid distractions of any kind which would result in a break in his training and self discipline.
  - xi. This was considered the greatest educational system the world has ever known and was obviously NOT compulsory.
    - a. Compulsory Education cannot ever be any real good, because it is compulsory.
    - b. This is the worst thing ever to happen to the United States of America and any nation which has had compulsory education has destroyed itself through the educational system.
    - c. See COMMON CORE.
    - d. When a man entered the gym it required Positive Volition and many went into the system of the gym whether they won or even competed in the games because if you went through 10 months of this training you could go to any area of Roman life including getting a commission in the Roman army.
  - xii. The whole concept of Roman education and the reason for the greatness of Rome having lasted for 1000 years was this SELF DISCIPLINE and respect for AUTHORITY.
    - a. Their concept of education was not to throw a lot of information in various courses at the student but to train them in SELF DISCIPLINE both body and mind.
    - b. They used intensive physical training and intensive memory training as well and this was one of the secrets of the GREATNESS of Rome.
  - xiii. The Dietary Laws were prescribed for avoiding rich foods and unhealthy things including wine etc and this was analogous to Objectivity in learning Bible Doctrine.
  - xiv. The authority and enforcement of the rules and discipline was in the hands of the Gumnasiarchos the Ruler of the Gym and this was the most sought after job in Rome for over 200 years.
    - a. He wore a beautiful Purple Robe and white sandals as his badge of authority and most often the retired Roman Generals held this job.
    - b. He was considered to be in the highest sphere of success in Rome and this was one of the Highest Honors ever to be bestowed on any Roman citizen.

- c. Under this man were some 4 – 500 marshals who were to keep track of all athletes and ensure the rules were enforced and followed.
3. Once the 10 months of training was completed the man was eligible to compete in the games which had many events.
- i. The WINNER received a Stephanos made of Leaves from the local trees for their head.
  - ii. When the winner returned to his home town they cut a hole in the wall and allowed him into the city by this means and then closed it up and put a plaque with his name and events on it.
  - iii. He received also a lifetime pass to the games and a monetary award from the city ruler, a poet wrote to commemorate him and a statue was put up in the central square to honor him and his event.
  - iv. His children and wife were fed at public expense for the rest of their lives and he was exempt from all future taxes.
  - v. All competitors whether they won or lost had great job opportunities waiting for them.

1Cor 9:24-27

v24: **Do you not know that those who run a race all run (Believers at a certain time in life) but one receives the decoration of the prize, therefore run in such a way that you may be winners, through Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine daily**

v25: **but everyone who keeps on competing in the games exercises self discipline in all things resulting in authority orientation, in order to receive a human reward but we to receive an imperishable reward.**

v26: **therefore I keep on running in such a way as not aimlessly, without a goal or objective in life, I box or fight in such a way as NOT beating the air always making every blow count to WIN by taking in Bible Doctrine.**

1Cor 9:27

v27: **but instead I discipline my Body through authority orientation and keep it in training through the daily function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception, as having proclaimed or communicated to others the word of God I myself might be disqualified from decoration (No Pastor Teacher can lead his congregation beyond his own spiritual growth)**

4. 1Cor 9:24 tells every believer that he can run in the race of the Spiritual Life and WIN and reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace.
- i. Everyone who competes in the games exercises SELF DISCIPLINE and every believer must also exercise this function in order to gain the imperishable wreath.
  - ii. In fighting everything is timing and foot work and you work day and night to get your timing down but if you lose your timing you most likely will lose your fight.
  - iii. Paul is saying that he wants his timing to be perfect and this is only done by taking in Bible Doctrine consistently daily and if you don't it is like a boxer losing his timing who cannot make his punches count for anything and this is like a reversionist.
  - iv. The constant function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception is the self discipline of constant training for the Spiritual Life.
  - v. Without this we all should be disqualified for the blessings and rewards of Surpassing Grace Blessing.

C. Principles:

**1. Self discipline is living your life NOW in the light of eternity.**

- i. This is persistent function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception from spiritual infancy to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and on to Ultra Super Grace.
- ii. This provides that needed for the benefits of eternity.
- iii. Eternity is SO incomprehensibly long and time is so very very short in comparison and to screw things up in time and be a PEON for all eternity with only a Resurrection Body minus the Old Sin Nature and Human Good and nothing to show for your time in TIME is a total disaster.

- iv. Despite this heaven will have nothing but happiness although there will be many layers or levels of happiness and there will be GREAT differences between believer in eternity.
  - v. There will be a vast difference between the believer who has reached Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace or Ultra Super Grace and his eternal wreath and the believer who has NOTHING but his Resurrection Body.
  - vi. These rewards and blessings are what will glorify Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ for all eternity and this is the ONLY means of glorifying God in time.
  - vii. Self Discipline must therefore have the GREATEST motivation and to be consistent in any area of life requires Self Discipline.
  - viii. There are a thousand things which could keep one away from bible study and only this one which will keep you.
2. Once you get even a small glimpse of eternity you are motivated to the function of self discipline so necessary for the consistent function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception and resultant spiritual growth.
  3. The overriding considerations of eternity are more important than any distractions of time.
  4. Yielding to the distractions of time can only produce reversionism
  5. Self discipline counter this tendency and brings the believer under the academic discipline of the local church where spiritual growth is accomplished.
  6. The persistent function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception is the only source of spiritual growth in time.
    - i. No system of works or Human Good production which can result in growth.
    - ii. No growth or progress can occur as a result of Works or Human Good production.
  7. Spiritual Growth occurs in the SOUL not the body.
    - i. The soul is the battleground of the Angelic Conflict.
    - ii. What causes growth in the soul is WORDS or VOCABULARY but they have to be in the Right Lobe Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
    - iii. Words produce concepts which in turn produce technical words
    - iv. Technical words produce categories and these are a Frame of Reference for understanding Bible Doctrine.
    - v. Bible Doctrine residing in the Right Lobe Stream of Consciousness of the Soul categorically means only **KNOWLEDGE** of Bible Doctrine not understanding.
    - vi. KNOWLEDGE of Bible Doctrine leads to understanding of Bible Doctrine but this is not the same.
      - a. You must understand Bible Doctrine to use it and teach it.
      - b. Only the one who understands a subject can teach anyone any time.
      - c. You must understand Bible Doctrine before you can reduce the doctrine to the level needed to teach it to others.
      - d. It takes understanding to communicate something to someone else.
      - e. Writing about anything requires understanding thoroughly what you are writing about.
      - f. Between learning Bible Doctrine from the right Pastor Teacher and writing down the information there can be a lot of confusion generated.
      - g. The key to parents teaching Bible Doctrine is to LISTEN to a doctrinal lesson or principle until it is thoroughly understood and then teach it to the children in short increments at their level.
      - h. You cannot tie yourself down to a printed lesson plan or curriculum an effectively teach others.

- i. Mastering information requires repetition over and over and then there develops the qualification for teaching.
- 8. You cannot teach what you cannot or do not understand.
  - i. There is no literature which can ever act as a substitute for your own understanding.
  - ii. Memorizing a written text does not bring understanding of the material written or the function described it requires repetition and merging the material into categories to bring understanding.
  - iii. You cannot read bible information and understand Bible Doctrine and you must be taught under 2 principles of Discipline
    - a. Self Discipline which motivates you to succumb to the authority of the Pastor Teacher represented by your attendance in bible study.
    - b. Academic Discipline which perpetuates Self Discipline inside the classroom of the local church causing objectivity and concentration in hearing the principles of Bible Doctrine.
    - c. If you don't understand doctrine in the first place you cannot communicate it in the second place.
- 9. Self Discipline is a MAJOR part of the spiritual progress of any believer and you cannot move ahead in the Spiritual Life without it.
  - i. This is what keeps you coming to bible study having Bible Doctrine as your #1 priority no matter how you feel or get hurt by it or how hypersensitive or subjective you might be.
  - ii. Self discipline keeps you coming and concentrating on Bible Doctrine and is the major factor in the advance to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and Ultra Super Grace.

### III. The Last words of Paul explaining anything – His Dying Grace explanations v9-22

- A. Timothy has a key pastorate in Ephesus a very important local church which is the Key to everything and cross roads to everything.
  - 1. Paul is saying DROP everything and come to ROME.
  - 2. There comes a time in the life of every believer when he forsakes everything routine in life to concentrate on one specific thing and this is what Paul is telling Timothy to do.
  - 3. This is a challenge to every believer to push through doing a thing without regard to routine functions.
- B. Principle:
  - 1. Paul would like to personally talk with Timothy before he dies.
  - 2. Timothy is not only the new leader but a personal friend of the apostle Paul and he has a desire to see this best friend before his death.
    - i. There is a great age difference here but AGE has nothing to do with friendship.
  - 3. Therefore the importance of Christian fellowship in Dying Grace.
  - 4. Paul expresses here and elsewhere the desire to have his personal friends around him at death because he has in human love only Category III love Friendship and having this in living and now entering the phase of the greatest of all blessing in his dying he would like to have his friends share his blessings.
    - i. Paul had one of the greatest blessing of anyone in dying and by his friends coming to see him at this time they could share his blessings.
    - ii. His friends are scattered all over the Roman empire and v10- tells us how and why they are scattered and even though they are separated there is great significance in mentioning them in dying.

### IV.

#### 2Tim 4:9

v9: Hasten or make every effort to do whatever is needed to come face to face to me without delay.

- I. Article Jerry Constantino Shooting Times Magazine “Say Goodbye to Common Sense” about the government grant idiocy.
- II. V10-12 The duty Roster
  - A. There is an essential need for there to be a DUTY roster to keep track of people in any organization.
  - B. We see this now in the Spiritual Life perspective in this passage and Paul has only LUKE with him at this moment but there are friends and associates and those on his missionary team scattered all over the empire.
    1. The “morning report” or Duty Roster simply details the Status Quo of those Christian soldiers who have been serving under Paul’s command and genius.
    2. This is in effect his last morning report before his death and there are other rosters in Col 4, Rom 16, and at the close of almost every Pauline epistle there is such a duty roster.
    3. This teaches lessons regarding the Spiritual Life and function of the Royal Family of God and we will give time to this last duty roster.
  - C. The first person on the duty roster is a Casualty, Demas
    1. This is a shorter or nick name for Dematrios mistranslated Demetrius.
    2. Demas means popular and is mentioned along with Luke in Col 4:14 where there is another duty roster, also in Philemon 24 AD62.
    3. 6 years before the writing of 2<sup>nd</sup> Timothy AD 68 Demas was an active member of the team but now he is a casualty.
    4. Demas deserted Paul and as all reversionists are in fact deserters from the Royal Family of God
      - i. Reversionism is the Status Quo of being AWOL.
      - ii. Many people come and go from bible doctrine and some stick and those who go are in this same category.
      - iii. Many fail for one reason or other as they get into the reaction stage thus entering reversionism.
    5. Here Demas has gone AWOL and has entered into reversionism.
  - D. (gr) Agapao == love but here is used for setting up a Scale of Values and something went wrong with the Scale of Values of Demas at some point and he lost track of what was important.
    1. Demas failed to overcome the Pressures of the day for the advancing Christian especially a Leader in the early church.
    2. We must constantly evaluate our Scale of Values and what is our first priority in this life.
    3. If we have Bible Doctrine as Priority #1 we have a proper Scale of Values.
    4. Doctrine must precede everything and must take precedence over everything and the day that Bible Doctrine ceases to do so everything falls apart in life.
    5. Bible Doctrine is the means of the perfect happiness we are to share with God at Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.
    6. Many believers turn away from the doctrine which will bring them this perfect happiness and if they do in any way achieve any happiness in reversionism it turns out to be Minus H of the Cosmic Dynasphere.
    7. This is just another part of Divine Discipline for it is the type of happiness which makes you 2x as miserable as you were before you had the subject by which you became happy.
    8. The desertion of Demas came AFTER his move into reversionism and had changed his Scale of Values.
    9. Once your Scale of Values changes there is nothing to hold a believer to Bible Doctrine and then inevitably leave doctrine and fall deeply into reversionism.
    10. The only possible way for spiritual growth to occur is through the soul and the only way to have spiritual growth is to ADD words, vocabulary, concerning Bible Doctrine and the



Plan of God to the soul and they MUST be meaningful and lead to the understanding of concepts, principles, policies of God and categories of Bible Doctrine.

11. As this develops then Bible Doctrine becomes more and more important but there is a time when everyone is tested
  - i. When you think you are objective then your Achilles Heal shows up and you are tested in this area.
  - ii. This may bring hypersensitivity, self pity, irritation or resentment of perceived injustice, and this causes a change of the Scale of Values and this resentment, self pity etc begins to move a new Scale of Values to the front of the soul.
  - iii. You first become more important to self than you ever should be and this is entrance into BLIND ARROGANCE a source of great weakness and leads to a complete change of attitude on many subjects.

E. Demas had an opportunity for advancement in another place aside from Rome with Paul

1. It is said here to be Thessalonika and instead of staying with Paul as was his responsibility he left for a place of better advancement and convenience which would lead to greater personal success and pleasures.
2. This is in fact an OFFER from Satan himself to ANY believer who comes under the influence of Evil.
  - i. This is a means of distraction for certain believers from the number one priority of Bible Doctrine.
3. (gr) Aion==
  - i. Prolonged Time == Eternity
  - ii. Doubled == Eternity / Eternal Life
  - iii. Time in the World == Dispensations
  - iv. Time or the course of the world == World.
  - v. Hellenistic mysteries equated Aion with Kosmos == the Organized World that Satan rules.
  - vi. Homer used this as the FORCE OF LIFE and a FORCE IN LIFE and finally LIFE itself.
  - vii. Hesiod used it for LIFE TIME
  - viii. Zenaphin and Aesculus for Generation.
4. The general context determines the meaning which is applicable to the translation and here we understand that there was something MUCH more important to DEMAS than Bible Doctrine and as a result he lost the whole meaning of life.
  - i. It is always amazing to see believers THROW AWAY the very capacity for life, the basis for happiness and blessing in life, everything in seeking to go after what THEY think is important in life.
5. AS LONG AS DOCTRINE IS FIRST IN LIFE AND YOU KEEP MOVING FORWARD TO Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and Ultra Super Grace you will have capacity for life and therefore a GREATER life with GREATER happiness.
  - i. When YOU become more important to YOU than Bible Doctrine then YOU are always looking for something to make you happy and you ignore that which God has designed for you in Eternity Past and you go your own way and fall back on your own opinions as to what will make you happy and successful and advance you in this life and this is what DEMAS did.
  - ii. This is part of the satanic policy of evil in Stage 4 of reversionism the Emotional Revolt of the Soul.

F. Principles:

1. When the believer enters reversionism the Satanic Policy of evil the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil eventually takes over in the soul at stage 4 Emotional Revolt of the Soul or stage 5 Locked in Negative Volition to Bible Doctrine.

- i. Review the Stages of Reversionism
  - ii. The Frantic Search for happiness even if successful can only produce Stage 3 Operation Boomerang in which the original Reaction is compounded leads to Emotional Revolt of the Soul where emotion revolts against the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and where the Frame of Reference begins to lose Bible Doctrine and the storage of the Memory, Vocabulary and Categorical storage and Launch Pad and norms and standards which always put Bible Doctrine first are all frozen
  - iii. This results in a very strong Negative Volition toward Bible Doctrine and this causes the vacuum to open in the Left Lobe of the Soul where you KNOW Bible Doctrine as GNOSIS.
    - a. The Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul is where you understand Bible Doctrine as Epignosis Bible Doctrine.
  - iv. As a result of this Vacuum being opened up in the soul EVIL comes through into the Left Lobe of the Soul and pushes out knowledge of Bible Doctrine.
  - v. Evil however does not have the power to destroy Epignosis Bible Doctrine but Epignosis becomes frozen and unusable.
  - vi. If you only know Bible Doctrine when the vacuum opens and EVIL flows through there is destruction of Knowledge of Bible Doctrine which is Blackout of the Soul.
  - vii. Then it freezes everything under Scar Tissue of the Soul or hardness of heart and lastly Reverse Process Reversionism is the final stage of reversionism.
  - viii. When you enter reversionism you are eventually taken over in the soul by EVIL the policy of Satan.
2. This influence of evil causes the believer to change his priorities which become totally incompatible with the Grace Plan of God and therefore this believer thinks like an unbeliever.
- i. In the garden Adam and Ishah had a choice between the Tree of Lives which gave them capacity to appreciate the Grace Plan of God and his provisions for them and Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil the policy of Satan for ruling this earth.
  - ii. The one thing they did not need in the garden was Knowledge of Good and Evil.
  - iii. Once the partook of the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil they became spiritually dead and immediately they knew EVIL the policy of Satan and immediately they produced from this EVIL Human Good being Spiritually dead.
  - iv. We are born into this world spiritually dead with an Old Sin Nature and as a result when God gives us Soul Life which combined with the Biological Life of the fetus becomes Human Love he cannot give us life capable of being with himself because of the Spiritual Death from the Old Sin Nature.
  - v. We therefore have no relationship with God and come to the cross and under Positive Volition become BORN AGAIN by faith in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ alone.
  - vi. Now we are NO LONGER spiritually dead but by entering the various stages of reversionism we assimilate the same principle of Spiritual Death which means to be under the influence and function of the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil.
  - vii. The reversionist gets into this by reversionism and he is NOT under Spiritual Death but reversionism has the same effect, he being totally OUT OF PHASE with the Plan of God.
3. 2 things are excluded from the thinking of the believer under the influence of evil.

4. First the priorities of Life after Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God namely the moving to and reaching Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and Ultra Super Grace and on to Dying Grace.
  5. Second the Black Out of any blessings and rewards of our Surpassing Grace package.
    - i. Once your priorities of the Spiritual Life are destroyed then you will lose the Super Grace blessing package and also the Surpassing Grace package of blessing and reward.
    - ii. You will lose all decorations and rewards and all things associated with them thus ending up in eternity with a Resurrection Body minus the Old Sin Nature and minus Human Good.
    - iii. This does not glorify God forever.
  6. The reversionist is totally ignorant of the 3 wreaths or the Highest Decorations for the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God which constitute maximum glorification of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ forever.
    - i. Review the Wreaths
  7. The eternal future of the believer becomes a total mental blackout for the reversionistic believer and they do not live their life in the light of eternity NOR under the divine blessings of time.
    - i. Satan superimposes his Genius thinking since reversionism makes them vulnerable to the genius Policy of Satan Evil.
    - ii. Reversionistic believer emphasize their own concepts in life rather than God's Concepts.
  8. For every believer there are 2 plans for their life:
    - i. God's Grace Plan
      - a. This calls for advance from Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace or Ultra Super Grace.
      - b. The ultimate in the Grace Plan of God is Dying Grace.
    - ii. His OWN Plan
      - a. This can only rely on his own resources and entering reversionism.
      - b. The ultimate in this plan is the Sin Unto Death for our reversionism.
    - iii. Therefore the TYPE OF DEATH we have reflects whether we have been functioning in the Grace Plan of God or our own plan.
    - iv. When you Switch priorities from the Plan of God to our own plan by entering reversionism then our greatest troubles begin.
    - v. This explains why Demas is a casualty in this Morning report.
- G. Demas was once a vital member of Paul's team simply just up and left with no notice to Thessalonika.
1. Having rejected Bible Doctrine he changed his priorities he became involved in some plan of his own or scheme for promoting his own life and happiness and therefore changed rapidly from Rome to Thessalonika and in this change lost out completely.
  2. Apart from Reversion recovery Demas will miss out on all the blessings which God had for him in life and also in eternity.
    - i. Review the 5 categories of the Super Grace blessing package.
    - ii. He will also be under 3 categories of Divine Discipline to and including the Sin Unto Death.
  3. He loses all things which are worthwhile in life and all those things which will glorify God in eternity.
  4. He will have an UNSATISFACTORY Efficiency Rating at the Judgment Seat of Jesus Christ and will have only Ultimate sanctification but no rewards or blessings of surpassing grace.

### III. The next entry in the Duty Roster or Morning Report

#### A. Private (gr) Kreskes == Increasing

1. If any significance could be attached here he is obviously a believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and increasing.
2. Apart from this reference we know nothing about Kreskes

#### B. Principle:

1. Every believer is as much in full time Christian service as any pastor, missionary or evangelist therefore the phrase “Kreskes to Galatia” expresses the power of the ordinary life of the believer.

#### C. Dynamics of the Ordinary Life:

1. The ordinary Christian is defined as that believer whose spiritual gift is not related to spiritual leadership nor communication of Bible Doctrine.
2. Every believer or member of the Royal Family of God is in full time Christian service.
  - i. Whether in the ranks or an officer depends on the spiritual gift and its exploitation and the system of authority established by God which resides in the Pastor Teacher.
  - ii. This means there is no such thing in dedication to full time Christian service since every Christian is a full time Christian either in reversionism or advancing.
3. Production is not the major issue in the Christian Way of Life.
  - i. The major issue is SPIRITUAL GROWTH and the objectives are defined in terms of Spiritual Maturity, Super Grace, Ultra Super Grace, Dying Grace.
  - ii. Production is NOT the means of spiritual growth but at best a result of it.
  - iii. All objectives in the Spiritual Life are obtained or reached by the transfer of Bible Doctrine from the scripture pages to your soul by the communication of the Pastor Teacher.
  - iv. This is another reason why memorizing scripture has no advantage in the Spiritual Life since this is another human work or effort.
  - v. When you memorize a lot of scripture you become disoriented to the Christian Way of Life and by doing this you bypass the principle of Authority and Discipline residing in the Pastor Teacher.
  - vi. There is NO MERIT in memorizing scripture but the only merit is the Metabolized Bible Doctrine in your Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and the communicator is the Pastor Teacher.
  - vii. All objectives of the Spiritual Life are obtained through persistent function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception.
  - viii. Memorizing scripture has only one advantage even to the unbeliever that being the teaching of Self Discipline.
  - ix. The Col when he was left by his father going away with his mother she not being able to control him very well disciplined him by making him memorize scripture and long before he was saved he knew great volumes of what was in the bible.
    - a. By his own admission this did not make him a Christian nor advance him in any way except through the development of Self Discipline.
  - x. You cannot and do not transfer Bible Doctrine to your soul by memorizing scripture and if you memorize many parts of scripture all over the bible you will be totally confused about everything.
    - a. You will be a disgrace and will always be quoting scripture and have not idea of the content or context and especially not the doctrine and are only a discombobulated Idiot.
4. Private Kreskes is mentioned in the last duty roster or morning report for Paul as dedication to the Ordinary Christians.
  - i. Believers to not have to live in the limelight to be great with the Lord.

5. In many ways the ordinary life is the most difficult life and has fewer moments of recognition, approbation and stimulation therefore it requires greater self discipline in persistence under the daily function of the Grace Apparatus for Perception.
6. Kreskes is the bible memorial to the ordinary believer who lives the extraordinary life without publicity or recognition.
  - i. He reaches Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God as a result of his daily function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception.
  - ii. He reaches Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace with the magnificent blessings of his super grace package
  - iii. He moves on to Ultra Super Grace without fan fair or encouragement from others.
  - iv. He becomes a great prayer warrior because Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God gives him the ability to produce therefore his works are effective.
  - v. He is a great witness for Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and becomes highly effective in the organization of the local church and there are many unseen wonderful things he does and he never gives a testimony or brags about what he is doing.
  - vi. He does all as unto the Lord and his greatness is registered in heaven forever and will be apparent at the Judgment Seat of Jesus Christ.
7. The believer in ranks may be out of sight in the Christian community and may not have any worldly recognition but is never out of God's Sight.
  - i. His production reflects Metabolized Bible Doctrine in his Stream of Consciousness of the Soul
  - ii. He is free from arrogance and its counterparts.
  - iii. He is free from the influence of evil and reversionism
  - iv. He serves the Lord in his own quiet way without trying to brag or impress other about what he is doing.
  - v. He is free from approbation and power lust and his head is never turned by complements.
  - vi. He is unknown to others but is well known by the opposition of Satan and the Demons.
  - vii. He carries his generation in history as a spiritual atlas.
  - viii. He is a blessing to all associated with him and enjoys perfect happiness and blessing in life.
8. The believer in ranks has a true perspective regarding service as a believer.
  - i. He knows the Christian service is not what we DO FOR THE LORD but what the LORD'S GRACE DOES THROUGH US.
  - ii. Therefore he sees Christian service as a channel as expression of grace rather than the means of making points with the Lord.
  - iii. Therefore Christian service must reflect spiritual growth and progress in the Spiritual Life and this only occurs when there is maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in his Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
  - iv. Maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul therefore exploits the balance of residence of the Filling of God the Holy Spirit and Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
  - v. Therefore the Christian Way of Life is NOT activity nor productivity but is CONDUCTIVITY we being transmitters of the Grace of God not creators of the Grace of God.
9. Therefore The private in the army of God is just as much in full time Christian service as the general in the army of God.

- i. The Angelic Conflict is resolved by the advance of the ordinary people as much as by great people like Paul.
- ii. This is therefore a monument to the rank and file believer in Kreskes.

**Lesson #98      Series # 469      4/21/2019      2Tim 4:10**

- I. Freedom through Military Victory:
  - A. General George S. Patton Jr. Prayer in a Cathedral in Luxembourg just before the Ardenes Offensive
  - B. Sir this is Patton talking, The last 14 days have been straight hell, Rain, Snow, more Rain, more snow and I am beginning to wonder what is going on in our headquarters. Whose side are you on anyway. For 3 years my chaplain has been explaining this as a religious war, this they tell me is the crusades all over again except we ride tanks instead of chargers, they insist that we are here to Annihilate the German army and the godless Hitler so that religious freedom can return to Europe. Up until now I have gone along with them for you have given us your unreserved cooperation. Clear Skies and calm seas in Africa made the landings highly successful and helped us to eliminate Rommel. Sicily was comparatively easy and you supplied excellent weather for our armored dash across France the greatest military victory that you have thus far allowed me. You have often given me excellent guidance in difficult command decisions and you have led the German units into traps which made their elimination fairly simple. But now you have changed horses in midstream. You seem to have given VonRumstead every break in the book and frankly he is beating the hell out of us. My army is neither trained nor equipped for winter warfare and as you know this weather is more suitable for Eskimos than for southern cavalymen. But now sir, I cannot help but feel that I have offended you in some way. That suddenly you have lost all sympathy with our cause. That you are throwing us in with VonRumstead and his paper hanging God. You know without me telling you that our situation is desperate. Sure I can tell my staff that everything is going according to plan but there is no use telling you that the 101<sup>st</sup> Airborne is holding out against tremendous odds in Bastogne and that this continental storm is making it impossible to supply them from the air. I have sent Hugh Gaffey one of my ablest generals with the 4<sup>th</sup> armor division toward that all important road center to relieve the encircled garrison and he is finding your weather much more difficult than he is the Krauts. I don't like to complain but my soldiers from the Merse to the Echtenach are suffering the tortures of the Damned. Today I visited several hospitals all full of frost bite cases and the wounded are dying in the field because they cannot be brought back for medical care. But this isn't the worst of the situation, lack of visibility, continually rains have completely grounded my air force. My technique of battle calls for close in flight bomber support and if my planes cannot fly how can I use them as Aerial Artillery. Not only is this a deplorable situation but the worst yet, my reconnaissance planes have not been in the air for 14 days and I haven't the faintest idea what is going on behind the Kraut lines. Dammit Sir, I cannot fight a shadow, without your cooperation from a weather standpoint I am deprived of an accurate disposition of the German armies and how in the hell can I be intelligent in my attack. All of this probably sounds unreasonable to you but I have lost all patience with your chaplains who insist that this is a typical Ardenes winter and that I must have faith. Faith and Patience be damned. You have just got to make up your mind on whose side you are on. You must come to my assistance so that I may dispatch the entire German army as a birthday present to your prince of Peace. Sir I have never been an unreasonable man and I am not going to ask you for the impossible I do not even insist on a miracle for all I request is 4 days of clear weather. Give me 4 days so that my planes can fly so that my fighter bombers can bomb and strafe so that my reconnaissance can pick up targets for my magnificent artillery. Give me 4 days of sunshine to dry this blasted mud so that tanks can roll, so that ammunition and rations can be taken to my hungry and ilequipped infantry. I need these 4 days so that I can send VonRumstead and his godless army to Valhalla. I am sick of this necessary butchery of American youth and in exchange for 4 days of fighting weather, I will

deliver you enough Krauts to keep you bookkeeper enough months behind in their work. {This was all the chaplain could get from his memory of this prayer}

## II. The Duty Roster continued:

### A. The Combat Officer – Titus

1. Titus was one of Paul's theological students in his ambulatory theological seminary.
  - i. Tit 1:4 he is called (gr) Teknon == Student
2. He is probably the brother of Luke which explains the absence of his name in Acts.
  - i. He was a test case in Jerusalem Gal 2:1-3
3. He could handle a tough situation where others failed therefore he became a great troubleshooter in Paul's team.
  - i. Timothy failed in Corinth because he was not tough but tended to be sweet and wimpish and failed miserably with the Corinthians.
  - ii. You cannot straighten out a bad situation like occurred in Corinth but you have to knock them down and straighten them out and this is what Timothy failed to do.
  - iii. Titus was sent to Corinth and cleaned up the mess really good. 2Cor 2:13, 12:18
4. Having straightened out the Corinthian church Titus rejoined Paul and turned Paul's depression into great happiness over the Corinthian case. 2Cor 7:5-7, 13-15
5. During the 1<sup>st</sup> and 2<sup>nd</sup> imprisonments Paul and Titus visited Crete and Titus was left behind to take command of a very sticky situation Tit 1:5
6. Trouble had now broken out in Dalmatia the Roman province in the eastern Adriatic a part of Yugoslavia.
7. Tradition indicates that Titus returned to Crete commanded there until his death and he lived to a ripe old age and was the only one who could hold the cretians in line in that generation.
  - i. The Cretians were sneaky, tricky, liars, hypocrites, phonies etc.
  - ii. A Pastor Teacher could go to them and give them the brotherly love crap and they would laugh themselves sick and move into reversionism.
  - iii. Titus went in there and was smarter than they were caught on to their hypocrisies and lies straightened them out and kept them moving and the only reason that anyone in Crete became a Super Grace believer in that generation was because of Titus.
  - iv. There is no place in the ministry for the sweet pastors who pat ladies hands and give out sweet epigrams and are very NICE.
  - v. Anyone who can be run over by people does not belong as a Pastor Teacher in a local church.
  - vi. Titus was super tough in Super Grace and was one of the absolutely greatest people ever to serve under Paul.

## III. Paul's 4<sup>th</sup> entry in the duty roster his Executive Officer LUKE.

### A. Luke had many other duties including Physician or Medical Corps, historian, having great abilities.

1. Luke's profession was medicine but his abilities were diversified and extensive,.
2. He had one of the greatest things a man could have in any organization, true executive ability.
3. Administrative Ability is rarely understood by most people.
  - i. Executive ability resides in all sorts of personalities and often the better and more efficient the executive the less time he has to be a Public Relations Type and generally as a result the LESS pleasing is his personality to the public.
  - ii. Any organization which is going to properly operate must have good administrators and good administrative function.
  - iii. Labor can come and go but good administration is worth his weight in Platinum.

- iv. The greater this administrative ability is the more people will lean on him from below and above both and he is the secret to success in business.
  - 4. The lord's business is more important than anything else in the entire world.
    - i. Therefore the lord's business should have as a policy in every local church a total no nonsense type of government.
      - a. Berachah is probably the only one in the world who has this fantastic government.
    - ii. Where there is a local church of any size there are all sorts of challenges.
      - a. Monetary challenges and the Pastor Teacher never touches the money ever for any reason and there are administrators who have this ability who take care of finances.
      - b. Building and property facilities and functions call for very diversified administrative functions.
      - c. No Pastor Teacher can do it all by himself.
      - d. The Lord has established a system of Deacons to fill this void.
      - e. The Pastor Teacher therefore delegates his authority in certain fields and this brings up the PRINCIPLE of Delegated Authority.
      - f. Finances, Personnel, School, Physical Plant and other functions are delegated by the Pastor Teacher to people whom he has found with the administrative ability in the needed areas.
      - g. When this occurs properly these people take the authority delegated by the Pastor Teacher to keep the local church functioning properly so that the Pastor Teacher can spend a maximum of time in his function of Studying and Teaching Bible Doctrine.
    - iii. Committees are the worst thing in administration and a large number of meetings and never will you find a good business operating successfully where these 2 things occur.
      - a. When you have a committee which is to make decisions about things they cannot agree on they spend a great deal of time in utter nonsense.
      - b. The committee cannot come up with anything whereas 1 smart administrator can come up with a whole answer and get the ball rolling.
      - c. If you have to stand around and wait for a meeting everything you need to organize something there is something seriously wrong with this organization.
      - d. To get things done in any organization does NOT require either committees nor meetings but a single smart administrator who sets up a system and policy and gives order to accomplish both.
  - 5. Luke was this kind of person and the executive officer for Paul and a writer of scripture and a great historian having written the UNIQUE books of the New Testament Scripture and a great physician his true greatness was in Administration.
    - i. No organization of any kind can function properly with a bunch of committees and having meetings all the time but there must be someone with authority who can make some instant decisions to get things rolling properly.
  - B. There are many believers in Rome but they have all deserted Paul
    - 1. There was his great combat team but they are scattered as we are noting.
    - 2. Timothy is going to inherit Paul's combat team therefore it is imperative for Timothy to get there not only to see Paul but to be read into the picture by Luke.
- IV. Luke:
- A. He is an extremely well educated gentile from Antioch
    - 1. Everything he does and is said about him speaks of education.



2. This brings out the point that if you have education there is a place for it but EDUCATION is overworked.
  3. Compulsory education is a FARCE today but some should be educated and trained to the maximum and Luke falls into this category.
  4. Luke is a physician, a historian, he writes in classical Greek which demonstrates his phenomenal education while many others on Paul's team are not educated at all.
  5. Education is NOT for everyone in the first place.
  6. Luke does not hesitate to advance himself as an expert historian contending a thorough investigation and collection of data prior to his contact with Christianity.
    - i. This is a phenomenal thing and Luke was converted because he was a historian and investigating the facts of Christianity.
    - ii. Modern historians today Since Robinson in 1912 in the United States of America have all gone crazy and cannot even write in good English and what they say is so subjective and not good history at all.
  7. Luke had extensive contact with early church leaders including Paul, Timothy, Phillip, Silas, Mark, Barnabas and James and therefore qualifies in every way as a historian.
- B. He is the Brother of Titus, (gr) of Adelpchos with Definite Article means "His Brother" referring to Titus **2Cor 8:18**
- C. He had a phenomenal relationship with Paul.
1. He joined the apostolic team at Troy on the 2<sup>nd</sup> missionary journey. Acts 16:10-11
  2. He accompanied Paul to Philippi but was not involved in the persecutions of Paul and Silas Acts 16
  3. When Paul left Philippi after his deliverance from jail Luke remained behind in order to help out in starting the New church Acts 16:10 comp Acts 16:40.
  4. Luke rejoined Paul on his 3<sup>rd</sup> missionary Journey when Paul came back to Philippi.
  5. He was from that time on appointed Paul's executive officer and remained with Paul until his death.
  6. EX: He shared in Paul's Jerusalem reversionism knowing Paul was wrong but stuck with him as a good Exec Officer Acts 20:6-21:18
  7. He shared in the Cesarean imprisonment of 2 years.
  8. He made the famous ship wreck voyage to Rome Acts 27:1, 28:2
  9. He was with Paul during the first Roman imprisonment Col 4:14, Philemon 24
  10. As noted in this context Luke was with Paul in his 2<sup>nd</sup> Roman imprisonment. 2Tim 4:11
- D. The Extra Biblical Legend that Luke died in Greece at Age 84.
1. In addition to being the medical officer for the early church he was also the historian and kept the duty roster / morning report for Paul.
  2. His loyalty and faithfulness to Paul is emphasized in this context and it takes a truly great believer with magnificent honor and integrity to take 2<sup>nd</sup> place to Paul.
  3. Therefore the most fantastic thing about Luke was that he had GREATNESS of his own but he never allowed his own personal greatness to prevent his subordination to Paul.
  4. His personal greatness was never in conflict with the principle of subordination of self to the Ultra Super Grace apostle Paul.
  5. The fantastic thing is that he was a person who was GREAT and stayed as #2 with Paul until his death and never did he think of going on his own or against Paul's authority.
  6. He was a great physician, a great writer but none of this was important to him and as long as Paul was alive he was the XO and remained as such.
  7. This demonstrates his HONOR and INTEGRITY and reminds of Jackson and Longstreet subordinating to Lee.
  8. It truly takes a great person to play a subordinate role to a greater person and this was LUKE.

9. It takes Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and Ultra Super Grace HONOR and INTEGRITY to take 2<sup>nd</sup> place to a greater person such as Paul.
10. Luke would have been #1 in any other generation but had no hangups about being 2<sup>nd</sup> to Paul.
11. He never challenged Paul's leadership of the early church, he had stability, loyalty, and as a writer he was a Genius (Luke & Acts)
12. As a believer he was either Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace or Ultra Super Grace.
13. As a historian he has not peer.

V. John Mark the hero of the early church under Paul.

- A. Mark has recovered from reversionism and is either in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace or Ultra Super Grace
  1. He was once despised by Paul but now is greatly appreciated.
- B. John Mark was the son of Mary of Jerusalem whose home was the place of assembly for the Jerusalem church Acts 12:12, 25
  1. She was a famous and wealthy woman living in Jerusalem and her brother appears to be Barnabas or cousin to Mark. Col 4:10
  2. Mark therefore comes from a VIP home.
- C. Mark was converted under the ministry of Peter, 1Pet 5:13
  1. The gospel of Mark is really Peter's gospel and presents Peter's account of our Lord.
  2. This explains why it is terse and short and in reading Mark in the Greek you know you are seeing the ministry of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ on earth through the eyes of Peter.
- D. Mark accompanied Paul and Barnabas on the first missionary journey. Act12:25, 13:5
- E. As a result of reversionism John Mark deserted the missionary team and returned to Jerusalem in reversionism and disgrace. Acts 13:13
- F. ***Mark recovered from his reversionism and the mark of true greatness in the Royal Family of God is SPIRITUAL RESILIENCE, the ability to recover from any failure in the Spiritual Life and the capability of withstanding SHOCK without permanent deformation or rupture of the Spiritual Life.***
- G. The Great Controversy:
  1. During the planning of the 2<sup>nd</sup> missionary journey Paul and Barnabas got into a real disagreement over John Mark.
    - i. Paul did not want to take him or give him another chance and considered Mark to be a Yellow SOB.
    - ii. He did not want any unreliable, unstable, yellow, jackass to go along on their journey.
  2. Barnabas recognized Mark's reversion recovery and wanted to give him another chance.
    - i. This occurred in Antioch of Syria which had at that time a flourishing church.
    - ii. That church stayed OUT of the ARGUMENT unlike many believers today.
    - iii. There were those who loved Barnabas, there were those who loved Paul and when the argument began some could have said Barnabas is right or Paul is right but they did not.
    - iv. When 2 people get into an argument they must be isolated in order to reconcile the disagreement.
    - v. This church in Antioch was the first church of mature believers while the Jerusalem Church was saturated with reversionism.
    - vi. Rome never came close to being great.
    - vii. In Paul's day it was Antioch and in Timothy's day it was Ephesus.

Acts 15:37

v37: But Barnabas determined from his intellect to take with them John, whose surname was Mark.

v38: But Paul thought not good to take him with them {Paul objected}, who deserted from them from Pamphylia, and went not with them to the work.

v39: **And the contention was so sharp between them that they completely separated one from the other. And so Barnabas took Mark with him{Grace Attitude}, and sailed away to Cyprus.**

3. Paul was wrong in this controversy and had lapsed into temporary legalistic carnality he continued his great ministry.
  - i. To understand this you must understand Sin or Carnality vs Evil
  - ii. Sin was taken care of on the cross with the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and our use of the Rebound Procedure.
  - iii. Evil was rejected at the cross and must remain in Human History until the end of history since it is the policy of Satan to rule this world and the underlying context for the Angelic Conflict.
  - iv. Most believers by focus on Sin find themselves moving into evil and they worry so much about what they are doing that they forget about what they are THINKING and EVIL is a thinking system.
  - v. What you are thinking is vastly more important than what you do and when you do some things which are sinful you can instantly recover with rebound but NOT with EVIL since EVIL opposes Bible Doctrine in the soul and must be removed by Metabolized Bible Doctrine in order to recover from involvement with it.
  - vi. In this occasion Paul was in carnality and he obviously used rebound and kept on moving forward and it did not slow him down and did not hurt his 2<sup>nd</sup> missionary journey.
  - vii. In fact Paul was greater on his 2<sup>nd</sup> missionary journey than on the first despite doing this “terrible” thing with regard to John Mark.
  - viii. Paul was not under the influence of evil nor in reversionism and GOD in his plan of grace in time USES imperfect and SINFUL people in his plan.
  - ix. God has never used a “sinless” person outside of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
  - x. Sinful people as a result can become great.
  - xi. This is painfully obvious in the political system in the United States of America today where a candidates opponents will try to bring out all of his bad behaviors in order to cause him to LOSE votes which it often does.
  - xii. The IRONIC thing is that some of the GREATEST rulers in history were totally IMMORAL people and it did not in any way detract from their greatness.
  - xiii. Paul was wrong and was being legalistic but recovered quickly and moved on but he was right in one sense HE alone had the right to decide who would and would not go with him being in Command.
  - xiv. Barnabas taking Mark with him to Cyprus resulted in him becoming a GREAT believer.
4. It is reversionism and evil which his a great hindrance to the ministry NOT carnality.
  - i. Anyone who thinks or says he has not sinned needs to wake up and read 1John 1.
  - ii. Recovery from carnality can be instantaneous while recovery from reversionism and the influence of evil can take a very long time and 2 years would be a very QUICK recovery.
  - iii. The famous Antioch church did not interfere with the controversy between Paul and Barnabas minding their own business and by this avoided a split in the congregation showing they were composed of a large number of believers in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace Acts 15:40.

H. The Dynamics of Grace:

1. The church of Antioch delivered Paul into the hands of the Lord without censor or approval and continued to recognize his authority and understood that the Lord alone possessed the authority to handle the matter.
2. This fantastic Grace Action on the part of Barnabas who took Mark with him is the last major activity of that Super Grace hero.

- i. Barnabas now disappears from the book of Acts and was still alive in 1Cor 9:6, AD57.
  - ii. He was still alive at the time of the writing of Timothy.
3. Historical Tradition associates Barnabas with both Rome and Alexandria in fact because of his association with Alexandria the classical Greek academic center many conclude that Barnabas is the Human Author of Hebrews.
4. If Barnabas did write Hebrews he is second only to Paul as one of the greatest all time teachers of Bible Doctrine.
5. The silence of scripture regarding Barnabas does Censor Barnabas but the spotlight from then on is no longer focused on Barnabas who was right on this occasion but on Paul who was wrong and being wrong did not hinder Paul from having the greatest ministry of anyone at any time in history.
  - i. Moses had the greatest ruling ministry but Paul had the greatest communication ministry of all believers.
6. God had a wonderful plan for Barnabas but it is not recorded in scripture.
7. Paul's failure did not hinder the great plan which God had for him and both men traveled the road to ultimate Glory, Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace to Ultra Super Grace to Dying Grace and to be decorated greatly under Surpassing Grace.
8. The Super Grace believers at Antioch isolated the controversy by NOT taking sides.
  - i. Super Grace Barnabas performed a great grace act which saved the ministry of John Mark.
  - ii. John Mark goes on to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and a dynamic ministry.
  - iii. Likewise Paul and Barnabas and therefore because of the wisdom of that local church in Antioch the ministries of 3 great men in the early church were saved.
- I. The controversy was finally settled when Paul was in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace in his first Roman imprisonment in Col 4:10, Philemon 24 he mentions that he was WRONG and implies it in 2Tim 4:11
- J. Future Ministry of Mark
  1. He was sent on a mission to Egypt where he founded or at least Pastored the Alexandria church.
  2. As pastor of this famous church Mark refused to renounce Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ during a Roman persecution and he being once a coward and deserter he stood up to the Roman tribunal with the result that one leg was tied to a Roman chariot going one way and the other to a chariot going the other and when he again refused to renounce Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ the Roman in charge gave the command and they ripped him to pieces and his soul entered into eternity.
  3. He died the brave man he was not the cowardly reversionist which he could have been and was at one time.

**2Tim 4:10**

**v10: For you see, because he has loved this present life or present age, Demas has deserted, abandoned, went AWOL from me having changed his Scale of Values based on the influence of Evil and the pressures which he was under, and he has just up and departed from me to Thessalonika; Kreskes to Galatia, Titus to Dalmatia. .**

**2Tim 4:11**

**v11: Luke alone is or keeps on being with me. Pickup John Mark on route and bring him with yourself; for he is very useful or profitable to me with reference to the ministry.**

**Lesson #99                      Series # 469                      4/27/2019                      2Tim 4:12**

- I. The Last Entry on the Duty Roster Tychikus – Tychicus:
  - A. Principle:
    1. The needs of the church must come before the personal desires of the Apostle

2. Paul would not permit the local church at Ephesus to be without a Pastor Teacher it being the KEY church in the early church history.
3. Tychicus is sent as a replacement for Timothy so that Timothy can come to Rome to receive the final instructions as to the changing of leadership in the early church.
4. Those who use authority best are those leaders most sensitive to the needs and problems of their command, PAUL.
5. Without thoughtfulness and loyalty to those you command AUTHORITY is abused and distorted in any sphere of life.

## II. Tychicus:

- A. He was associated with Paul during the 3<sup>rd</sup> missionary Journey Acts 20:4
- B. Along with Trophimus he is called a native of Asia Minor Acts 21:29
- C. Therefore Tychicus is the messenger who carried the prison epistles to their proper destination
  1. Ephesians, Philippians, Colossians, Philemon to Asia Minor
- D. During Paul's reversionistic journey to Jerusalem, Tychicus remained behind at Miletus Acts 20:15
- E. Tychicus joined Paul during the 1<sup>st</sup> Roman imprisonment Eph 6:21-22, Col 4:7-8
- F. Paul found Tychicus very dependable for he then sent him to Crete Tit 3:12
- G. During the 2<sup>nd</sup> Roman imprisonment he could only depend on Tychicus to get to Ephesus to relieve Timothy so that Timothy could get to Rome, 2Tim 4:12.
- H. Tychicus is mentioned in dispatches and commended for his faithfulness Eph 6:21, Col 4:7
- I. He is a very stable and a very unusual person and he is not very well known as part of Paul's team but his stability is seen in his ability to handle many different types of responsibilities and activities and is therefore is a very important person in the function of that team.

## III. The Logistical Commands of the Apostle

- A. Logistics is the military science of supplying, transporting and quartering troops.
  1. Here there is SUPPLY alone emphasized and Paul needs something for the body and spirit during this period of dying grace. V13
- B. (lat) Paenula == referring to a very very heavy coat with a traveling hood used for traveling in bad weather in Roman history instead of the Toga.
  1. It was designed for protection against Cold and Rain and made from WOOL or LEATHER
  2. Paul is writing in winter of AD68 Jan or Feb and is to be executed in Spring, meanwhile he needs this heavy winter coat to enjoy the winter of Rome at that time.
  3. He needed something to keep his body warm while enjoying his dying days and wanted the coat to keep out the weather so he could continue.
  4. Paul left this coat behind in a moment of reversionism
  5. Paul left his coat at Troy with Carpus and Troy at this time was a very great city and is mentioned quite frequently in
    - i. Acts 16 where the mission to evangelize Philippi started at Troy
    - ii. 2Cor 2:12, 2Tim 4:13 it is mentioned again.
    - iii. During his 4<sup>th</sup> missionary journey Paul stopped at Troy and left his winter traveling coat with Carpus a believer who lived there.
    - iv. Paul is in a sense asking for the coat and giving a BRIEF memorial to an unknown believer who provided Christian hospitality in a relaxed atmosphere to him.
    - v. Carpus was hospitable, and knew how to provide a relaxed place for Paul to stay and this was one of the few who knew how to entertain people in their home without pestering them so that they could enjoy it and relax and be at ease.
    - vi. As a result Paul stored some things with him and Paul traveled very light.
  6. Paul's friends included:
    - i. Onesiphorus 2Tim 1:16

- ii. Stephanous, Fortinadus, Nikakus 1Cor 16:17
- iii. Pricilla and Acquilla
- iv. Philemon Philemon 7+20
- v. Aphroditis Phil 2:25
- vi. Carpus of Troy
- vii. All over the ancient world were people who were very dear friends of the Apostle Paul and provided the ministry of Refreshment for him when he came to them.

C. Timothy did arrive in Rome before Paul Died.

- 1. Paul is at this time in good health and dying under dying grace and is sensitive to the weather in Rome at that time.
- 2. In addition for the soul, Paul commands him to bring the Rolls of Papyrus which were his reading library and he would spend a lot of time doing this in his dying days.
  - i. This gave him an avenue for his thinking and capacity for life.
- 3. Also for the spirit Paul commands him to bring the vellum parchments which were Paul's copy of the scripture completed at that time.
  - i. Even in Dying Grace Paul did not give up his lifetime habit of study of doctrine.

D. Principles:

- 1. Paul's approaching death does not hinder his enjoyment of life and this is the blessing of dying grace for the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace or Ultra Super Grace
- 2. This is the actual blessing of Ultra Super Grace and even though Paul has been tried and condemned to death he is not brooding pouting or giving way to any vindictiveness and being in the sphere of dying such that in a few months he will be executed.
  - i. He is not in the least bitter or upset in any way and totally relaxed as an Ultra Super Grace believer in the sphere of dying grace.
- 3. Neither does he complain in the next paragraph about the miscarriage of justice when he describes his trial before Nero.
  - i. Not one bit of bitterness being in a very peaceful sphere of dying grace.
- 4. Paul capacity for love, happiness, and life are placed in their proper perspective in this verse and when you have this great capacity it extends into the sphere of dying grace.
- 5. Out of this comes the principle that the knowledge of death does not hinder the capacity for life of the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace or Ultra Super Grace.
- 6. Breaking into Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God takes the sting out of death and dying will be a greater blessing than those of living.
- 7. Because of his capacity for life Paul intends to live in the best possible comfort in that uncomfortable Mamertine dungeon thus the reason for the request for his heavy coat.
- 8. Therefore the Coat to warm the body is still a factor in dying grace and he will remain warm and comfortable regardless of the weather because he is enjoying life.
- 9. Paul will also be surrounded by friends and loved ones and his favorite books and will read and study the bible parchments to the day of his execution.
  - i. Life and all its blessings goes no for the believer in Ultra Super Grace even while he is dying.
  - ii. He does not change his routine and does not cater to DEATH and whatever he was doing in life he continues to do right up to the moment of his last breath.
- 10. These logistical commands of Paul simply emphasize for us the blessing of Paul's dying grace period.
  - i. No matter how the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God dies it is always a period of great blessing.

IV. The Mantle of Opposition:

- A. Alexzandros the metal smith who worked with Bronze, Silver, Gold and iron was a man with a famous name and in his way was famous as a part of Paul's Ultra Super Grace decorations.
  1. This man hated Paul as much as anyone could hate another person and was a reversionistic believer and did everything he could to destroy Paul's ministry.
  2. He never succeeded but God put him in the category of the mantle of opposition for the Ultra Super Grace believer.
  3. Alexzandros first is seen in the Ephesian Riot of Acts 19 which was started by Demetrius the silver smith and at that time Alexzandros was also a silver smith.
  4. This man was a long time enemy and God used this man in a special way to BLESS Paul thought it was not Alexzandros' intention to be a blessing but God turned this around for the benefit of Paul.
  
- B. Paul is teaching in Ephesus and his fantastic ministry has aroused both tremendous response and tremendous reaction.
  1. Demetrius was a very famous Artisan and leader of the Guild or Smiths Union.
  2. They did a fantastic business in the manufacture and sale of small replicas of the goddess Diane which were sold at a fantastic prophet around the temples of Diana in Ephesus and this was one of the 7 wonders of the world.
  3. This temple was 425' long and 225' wide and had over 93500 sq ft of space and there were 127 famous columns within it.
    - i. Each column was 60 ft high and donated by a king in the ancient world to show off how great he was.
    - ii. These were studded with jewels and made of gold and some of the most beautiful artifacts of the ancient world.
    - iii. The vaults of the temple was the largest bank in the Roman empire with literally MILLIONS in capital assets in the vaults.
    - iv. At the entrance was a gigantic statue of Diana the Asiatic mother goddess of Earth, Sex and Fertility but not the Diana on Mt Olympus.
    - v. This is an identification with the Phrygian goddess Sybili, the capidocian goddess Ma and Diana in Syria is Mileta and the Phoenician goddess Astarte, the Assyrian Goddess Ishtar and related the Aphrodite on Mt Olympus or Latin goddess Venus
  
- C. The worship of Diana was conducted under 3 categories of People:
  1. The megabize the wealthiest and most famous priests of the ancient world and conducted the rights of worship.
    - i. To become a priest you had to castrate yourself in a very frenzied ceremony.
  2. The Melisiah were the female attendants or priestess' which were virgins involved in a famous demonic ritual.
  3. The Neochorus included hundreds of famous dancing prostitutes and the wild sex orgies in the phallic cult in this temple were unparalleled in ancient history
    - i. The famous sex dance the Choraban picturing the mythological attendants of Sybili the Chorabas and it goes on for days.
  4. The people in the Roman empire had recognized that this was one of the best places in the world to come visit and the empire recognized this as sort of a state religion.
  5. The Empire had recognized the Mayor of Ephesus as a very special person who was given a special title by the Senate, NEOCHOROUS in recognition of the religion at the temple.
  6. Every trade, Inn, Hotel, etc in Ephesus made tremendous wealth from this worship of Diana.
  7. Paul's teaching of Bible Doctrine was about to change this and many people in and around Ephesus and throughout the empire were making Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God and some of the wealthiest customers whom the temple had were not interested in the Diana cult since they were getting Bible Doctrine.

- D. Demetrius recognized the dynamics of Bible Doctrine and called a meeting of the Union and had a special type of approach to this problem called MOB VIOLENCE, Politics, Underhanded Tactics to neutralize the ministry of Paul
1. The weapons of Demetrius included:
    - i. Organization – the Silver Smith Union
      - a. Since the beginning of time union organizations have been used to incite riots and violence and have been ANTI ESTABLISHMENT.
    - ii. Greed – Emphasizing the fact that these members of the Union and the entire city of Ephesus were going to lose their great business and wealth because of Paul.
    - iii. Religion – Idolatry is Demonism and was a BUSINESS and illicit SEX activity which was very profitable.
    - iv. Mob Rule – Mobs cannot think, reason and has not honor nor integrity
    - v. Noise – Demon Possessed maniac Hitler knew all about how NOISE could be effective in controlling people and situations; Thousands of people shouting Zeig Hiel or Great is Artemis of the Ephesians this noise becomes a preliminary to Violence and the means of inciting violence and is mass self hypnosis.
    - vi. Violence – Nothing is ever accomplished by violence but it remains man’s great weapon against REASON.
  2. Bible Doctrine is reason and fantastic and the only way to overcome something as great as Bible Doctrine is through violence the most UNREASONABLE.
    - i. The most unreasonable weapon is used to neutralize the most reasonable thing in life Bible Doctrine.
- E. The Progress of the attempt to neutralize Paul and his ministry.
1. The UNREASONABLE RIOT became the weapon against the REASONABLE and RATIONAL Bible Doctrine and against the ministry of Paul.
  2. The union stirred up the whole city and the organized union organization knew exactly where to go to get the most people stirred up.
  3. Riot is MOB rule and mass hysteria and the mob cannot think nor act lawfully or rationally and therefore it is anti establishment.
  4. Stirring up emotions for a MOB incited to riot is MASS Emotional Revolt of the Soul which is divorced from reason and reacts in violence and is forged into a weapon of great destruction.
  5. The emotions of the masses is stirred up in this way and this is still one of the greatest weapons of history still used by Satan to neutralize the effectiveness of Bible Doctrine communication whether it is the gospel of other doctrines.
  6. Nothing is ever accomplished by Mobs which are totally lawless and these are the weapons of the anti establishment revolutionary and the enemy of Bible Doctrine and in opposition to freedom, authority and self discipline.
    - i. Demetrius led this mob to the home of Pricilla and Acquilla where Paul was staying.
    - ii. Pricilla and Acquilla courageously faced down the mob and saved Paul **Rom 16:3-4**
    - iii. This husband and wife team were in a great Category II relationship but also had incredible courage.
  7. Paul was delivered from the Arena of Ephesus where the mob was trying to feed him to the wild animals. **1Cor 15:32**
- F. Gaius and Aristarkus were seized by the Mob and taken to the amphitheater of the stadium but were saved by the speech of the Mayor.
1. The Mayor realized that if things got too far out of line in Ephesus ROME would take his title and authority and power and Ephesus would be off limits to the Empire and they would starve to death, **Acts 19:41, 20:4**



- G. Principles v31-32
1. A Mob cannot think because it is a case of mass Emotional Revolt of the Soul motivated by emotion divorced from reason and facts.
  2. NOISE becomes the weapon of the mob to destroy reason here Doctrine.
  3. Therefore the disciples will not permit Paul to speak to the mob who in Emotional Revolt of the Soul would not respond to him but simply try to kill him.
  4. The shouting will not drown out the effect of Bible Doctrine and it was in the Stream of Consciousness of the Souls of many people and Ephesus was to be the great center of Christianity and all the rioting and shouting and mobs in the world cannot drown out the effect of Bible Doctrine in the souls of believers.
  5. One lie amplified by 10,000s of voices in the stadium will not become truth, Diana is not great but an IDOL representing the principle of demon worship in the Phallic cult and they shouted this for a long time.
    - i. NOISE cannot convert a LIE into TRUTH.
  6. Neither does the noise of the crowd make the crowd right
  7. Therefore Mobs are Pawns used by satanic and human power lust to gain objectives for Satan and MOBS in rioting are the quintessence of Tyranny and there is no freedom in the violence and rioting of a mob.
- H. The Jews in the mob pushed Alexander the Metal Smith forward to address the Mob since they were concerned that the mob would relate this problem to Judaism.
1. Alexander was a very eloquent man and addressed the crowd intending to give a defense for Judaism to the mob so as to preclude them from associating Paul with Them.
  2. He wanted to disassociate Judaism with Christianity and Paul and he was a very eloquent speaker and was put forward by Jewish religious leaders to deny any complicity with Christianity and Paul's Ministry.
  3. The very sight of Alexander added ANTISEMITISM to the ANTI Christian sentiment of the Mob.
  4. He had the courage to face the mob and deny complicity with Paul and agree with them in their anti doctrinal stand and was motivated by terrible Hatred for Paul as an incredible Legalist and he despised Paul and his motivation was hatred and he wanted to destroy Paul with the violence of the Mob.
- I. This passage to this point gives us the relationship of Alexander to Paul and his hatred for Paul.
1. He had great courage to stand up before the mob putting his life on the line in order to try to turn the mob against Paul.
  2. Alexander the Copper Smith was a JEWISH believer in the reversionism of Jewish Legalism and therefore was one of Paul's lifetime enemies.
  3. The judiazers added keeping the law to salvation and spirituality and therefore created a false issue in the field of Legalism.

**Acts 19:23-**

**v23: And the same time there came or arose to pass no small disturbance a catastrophe concerning "The Way", Christianity.**

**Acts 19:24**

**v24: For a certain man named Demetrius, a silversmith, who made silver shrines for Diana {Artemis}, brought a fantastic profit for the craftsmen.**

**Acts 19:25**

**v25: Whom he {Demetrius} called together with the workmen of like occupation, and said, "Men, you know that our wealth or prosperity depends on this business"**

**Acts 19:26**

**v26: "Moreover you see and hear, that not alone in Ephesus, but in the entire Roman province of Asia, THIS PAUL (famous) has persuaded by clear logical communications or presentations; has convinced and turned away many people, saying that GODS WHICH ARE MADE WITH HANDS ARE NOT GODS AT ALL."**

**Acts 19:27**

v27: "So that not only is there danger that our trade will fall into disrepute, but also that the temple of our great goddess Diana {Artemis} should be despised, regarded as mere nothing, in fact she, whom all Asia and the world worshiped will be dethroned and destroyed from her magnificence!"

Acts 19:28

v28: And when they heard these sayings, they were full of ANGER, and shouted and shouted and shouted, saying, "Great is Diana {Artemis} of the Ephesians."

Acts 19:29

v29: And the whole city was filled with confusion {mob violence}. And having seized Gaius and Aristarchus, men of Macedonia, Paul's companions in travel, they rushed with one accord into the amphitheater.

Acts 19:30

v30: And when Paul (who was very sick) desired from the mentality of his soul to enter in unto or face the mob of people, the disciples kept on not allowing it.

Acts 19:31

v31: And certain rulers of the Religion of Diana, Asiarches -10 of the greatest most wealthy successful religious leaders in the Roman province of Asia, who were his personal friends, sent unto him messages, exhorting or ordering him that he would NOT expose himself into the theater.

Acts 19:32

v32: So then in the Amphitheater some therefore kept on shouting one thing, and some kept on shouting another; for the assembly received confusion typical of a mob minus lucid thought; and the majority of them did not know why they were there!

Acts 19:33

v33: And some of the mob erroneously concluded that the reason for the assembly was Alexander the Metal smith since the Jews pushed him forward to address the crowd. In fact Alexander stood on the platform and raised his hands for silence, he was intending to present a Judaism Defense defense unto the people.

Acts 19:34

v34: But when they knew that he was a Jew, all with one voice about the space of two hours kept on shouting, "Great is Diana {Artemis} of the Ephesians."

- J. The Next reference to Alexander the Metal Smith or Copper Smith
1. Paul delivered over to Satan Alexander and Hymenaeus for the Sin Unto Death.
  2. This indicates the opposition, antagonism and persecution perpetuated by Alexander against Paul which continued to the death of both of these believers.
  3. Even though Alexander was turned over to Satan he did not die because Satan was using this man and he will die later on.

1Tim 1:19

v19: Be having and holding or keeping the Bible Doctrine in the Human Spirit and Soul and keeping good of intrinsic value Norms and Standards of Bible Doctrine in the conscience, free from evil, which good conscience or Norms and Standards some reversionistic Believers have rejected, cast off, thrust away or repudiated, have suffered shipwreck concerning their Bible Doctrine being in reversionism with influence from evil resulting in bad Norms and Standards. (cut the happiness from God out of your life)

1Tim 1:20

v20: Among whom are Hymenae'us a gossip and malinger and Alexander, who keep on being in reversionism and under the influence of evil, whom I have delivered over to Satan in order that they might be taught the hard way by pain and discipline not to blaspheme.

- K. During the trial of Paul in Rome Alexander spoke out against Paul when others would not.
1. Alexander as a reversionistic believer is under the influence of evil and is a lifetime enemy of Paul and it is his purpose to destroy Paul and therefore becomes the accuser of Paul.
  2. It was to Paul's advantage to have this intensive opposition for it was part of the intensification of blessing for Paul under the Mantle of Opposition given to Paul.
  3. The more pressure the opponents of Paul put on to him the greater is the intensification of his blessing and happiness in Ultra Super Grace.
  4. Alexanders antagonism sweetened and intensified Paul's Ultra Super Grace blessings.
  5. Alexandros will be in heaven as a CLASSICAL illustration of a believer in ultimate sanctification MINUS the Old Sin Nature and Human Good but having NOTHING ELSE.
  6. Paul will be the most decorated man in heaven and Alexzandros a BELIEVER whose reversionism intensified his antagonism.

7. The best thing Alexander ever did in his whole life was to become part of the mantle of opposition to Paul.
  8. The enemy ship and antagonism of Alexander toward Paul only meant greater blessing for Paul **Rom 8:28**
- L. Principles of Evil directed toward Paul:
1. The question is why has the Sin Unto Death not been administered to Alexander event to this time since in 1Tim 1, he was turned over to Satan to administer this discipline therefore why is he still alive 2 years later.
  2. God continued the intensity of Alexanders Divine Discipline and he is more and more miserable and the greater his misery the greater is his antagonism toward Paul.
  3. God permits Alexander to continue living in order that Paul's blessings might be INTENSIFIED right down to the moment of his death.
  4. No man ever contributed greater blessing to Paul than this man who constantly and intensely opposed and despised him and the MORE intensive the opposition to Paul the MORE intense was the Ultra Super Grace blessings to Paul.
  5. Therefore Alexander was kept alive so that Paul might have this great intensification of blessings in Ultra Super Grace and so that in his dying moments Paul might have GREATER blessing in dying than any other person with the possible exception of Moses.
  6. Alexander has been opposing Paul for over 15 years now and this antagonism was the basis of incredible blessings for Paul.
- M. Paul then refers to Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ here who controls Human History and kept Alexander alive so that in Ultra Super Grace and Dying Grace Paul might have an intensified blessing beyond what most people ever experience.
1. Alexander does not die the Sin Unto Death until Paul has left the scene.
  2. Both Paul and Alexander will stand before the Judgment Seat of Jesus Christ were Paul will receive the highest decorations for the Church Age while Alexander will receive NOTHING.
  3. His thousands of GOOD DEEDS under Judaism will be burned and destroyed at the Judgment Seat of Jesus Christ.
- N. Paul is putting Alexander into the hands of the Lord for remittance for his life long hatred.
1. There will be the execution of the Sin Unto Death and no one will die a more miserable death than Alexander.
  2. At the Judgment Seat of Jesus Christ there will be LOSS for Alexander of Eternal decorations, blessings and reward, all surpassing grace blessings for all of eternity.
  3. The emphasis is on the total failure of Alexander and all believers who live in reversionism.
  4. There is no advantage or blessing for anyone living in reversionism only misery.
  5. When a believer gets locked into reversionism they are always under the mistaken idea that good WORKS cause spiritual growth.
    - i. Legalism
    - ii. Human Good
    - iii. Any type of works.
  6. The reversionist does not realize that on the cross Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ was judged for all human sins but all Human Good and all EVIL was rejected by him.
    - i. These must continue to the end of Human History as the policy of Satan to rule t his world.
  7. There are reversionists even to this day who spend their energy and time doing good deeds in order to acquire spiritual growth but these are the basis for the condemnation of the reversionistic believer at the Judgment Seat of Jesus Christ.
- O. Principles:

1. Paul makes it clear that this source of opposition in Ephesus must NOT become the source of a personal vendetta by Timothy or anyone else on his behalf.
  - i. After Paul dies he does not want anyone to try to get even with Alexander.
2. After his death there is the possibility that some misguided believer will seek vengeance and Paul wants to be clear and lucid that Alexander must be left entirely in the hands of the Lord.
  - i. No believer must try to take vengeance into his own hands after his death and believers are warned about this error.
3. Stay out of the way of the Justice of God so that you do not yourself become hurt.
  - i. Vengeance is mine, I will repay says the Lord
4. In the next verse Paul warns Timothy that he is passing the leadership of the church to him but is also leaving him in Ephesus his own mantle of Ultra Super Grace opposition in Alexander who is in Ephesus.
  - i. This anticipates Timothy reaching Ultra Super Grace.
  - ii. This explains why some evil reversionists remain alive so long as God keeps them alive as part of someone's mantle of opposition for intensified blessing in Ultra Super Grace.
5. Alexander is under the Sin Unto Death but will continue to live for some time to become a part of the mantle of opposition for other Ultra Super Grace believer like Timothy but Timothy must be on guard with regard to this man so as not to destroy any of his own blessings but leave him in the hands of the Lord.

**2Tim 4:12**

**v12: But I have, some time ago, sent out on an important mission to action as a replacement, Tych'icus, to Ephesus to relieve you.**

**2Tim 4:13**

**v13: When you come, bring the heavy coat or cloak, also the reading library books or scrolls, and more importantly, above all the leather or vellum parchments of the scripture at that time which I have left behind, in a moment of reversionism, at Tro'as, Troy, with Carpus.**

**2Tim 4:14**

**v14: Alexandros the Metal Smith showed or exhibited on certain occasions, demonstrating or giving proof of many categories of EVIL to me even at my trial in Rome; the Lord Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ, shall pay back or remit to him according to his deeds.**

**Lesson #100      Series # 469      4/29/2019      2Tim 4:15**

- I. The Warning Command to Timothy who will lead the church in the next generation.
  - A. For more than 15 years Alexander the Metal Smith has opposed the gospel and doctrinal message of Paul and Timothy who have studied and learned Bible Doctrine and communicated it to many.
    1. Both Paul and Timothy have faithfully taught Bible Doctrine in Ephesus and Alexander has constantly and vigorously resisted their teaching ministry and their authority and everything connected with them.
    2. Alexander has been part of Paul's Ultra Super Grace Mantle of Opposition and God is apparently going to keep him alive for a while longer in order that he might decorate Timothy as well.
    3. He is also kept alive in order to show the entire Christian world that Paul is passing the leadership role of the early church to Timothy under divine approval.
    4. Just as Alexander was part of Paul's Ultra Super Grace decoration he will live long enough to be part of Timothy's Ultra Super Grace decoration and then he will die once it is clearly established that Timothy is the New leader for the next generation.
- II. Summary of Paul's Trial before Nero
  - A. Lucian Domicius Hanabarbus – NERO
    1. He was adopted by his uncle Claudius and took the name Nero Claudius Caesar

- i. Nero == Strong
    - ii. Claudius == His uncle's name
    - iii. Caesar == his anticipation of being NEXT emperor.
  2. He was neither Valiant, Courageous or Strong.
    - i. His family Hanabarbus was a RED BEARDED family of Men who were reckless, loud mouthed and CRUEL.
- B. Nero was Paul's Judge in this trial in Early Winter AD68
  1. Many believers in Rome knew Paul but NONE Of them not a single one came to testify that Paul was a loyal Roman citizen and NOT against Rome in any way.
  2. These believer all knew that Paul was Persona Non Grata with the Roman empire and they did not care to endanger their own lives by standing up and testifying for him.
  3. Luke was BARRED from testimony as a personal friend of Paul's and therefore disqualified to testify along with all his other friends who were considered prejudiced for Paul.
  4. The believers in Rome were cowardly and therefore avoided the trial and giving testimony.
- C. Reasons for stating this:
  1. It was established by Timothy and the Book of Romans that the Roman church was never a strong spiritual church.
    - i. When it came down to apostasy they led the way down through the centuries.
    - ii. This was a NON courageous church and it never had any courage until it became a STATE church and then with the political power of State which was totally evil it became an OPPRESSIVE church in every generation.
    - iii. The Ephesian church was a great church and the Roman church was a center for Reversionism, Apostasy, Cruelty, Treachery, and instability and has never changed.
- D. Nero's persecution of Christians intimidated some of them but also the Roman church was saturated with reversionism and most were under the influence of evil and served Satan outright.
  1. God uses Paul's Trial before Nero to demonstrate this failure of the Roman church a failure which continues to the present time.
  2. Paul is also stating that he does not want any retribution directed toward them.
  3. These reversionist believer not only refused to testify and in fact DID not and the inevitable result from this would be the Divine Discipline of the Sin Unto Death.
  4. However, Paul recognized that some of these reversionists would repent and wake up and enter reversion recovery and he does not want their desertion of him to hinder their recovery and advance.
  5. Paul is saying here that he cannot dictate to God what he wants done with them but he can express his own thoughts about this desertion and if they recover from reversionism at some point he will trust that the Lord will give them the opportunity for spiritual advance.
  6. Simply for deserting Paul God could take their remaining time in life away and this would prevent their reversion recovery.
  7. In essence Paul is asking that if these believers desire to recover they be given time to do so.
  8. Paul does not want these deserting reversionistic believer to receive the Divine Discipline of the Sin Unto Death.
- E. It is important to understand that GREEK is about 1000% better than English for the advancement of refined thought and this is brought out in the grammar but NOT the translations.
  1. This is the LAST thing Paul ever wrote and is under dying grace when he is writing them and the specific use of the grammar shows he has a TOTAL Relaxed Mental Attitude toward these traitors who are responsible for his being under the sentence of Death.

2. He is not bitter, upset or disturbed with any of these people even though any one of them could have testified and saved him.

F. Principle:

1. “may it not be charged to them” means may they not be so disciplined for deserting me if they have any possibility for reversion recovery in the future and may they have the time to recover..
2. The wish expressed by the Voluntative Optative mood indicates the fantastic Grace Orientation of the Ultra Super Grace Paul.
  - i. In addition a very strong Relaxed Mental Attitude and not one bit of bitterness in his soul.
3. There is no bitterness no vindictiveness, implacability, recrimination and no desire for vengeance.
4. Therefore this verse expresses the dynamics of the Ultra Super Grace Mental Attitude
  - i. There is no way to shake the tranquility of soul Paul possessed from Metabolized Bible Doctrine
  - ii. No matter the terrible things people do to him they cannot disturb this doctrinal tranquility of Soul
5. Paul is not offering a prayer for these reversionists but he is merely expressing a Mental Attitude toward them.
6. Furthermore the importance of this grammar is that Paul is not trying to superimpose his will over divine sovereignty
  - i. Divine Sovereignty cannot be coerced nor changed and Paul knows this.
  - ii. He is only expressing his own Mental Attitude but not dictating to God as many do.
7. No believer can dictate to God EVER.
8. Therefore Paul can only express his own Grace Mental Attitude but he cannot and does not try to dictate to God what should be done with them.
9. God is fair and has all the facts and will make the proper disposition and the whole of every problem including this for Paul is in his hands.

III. For the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God:

- A. Once you reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God what people think of you is of absolutely NO consequence but it is only what the Lord thinks and does which counts in your life.
  1. Paul is living his life as unto the Lord for real without expressing false piety.
  2. When you get to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God you only care what the Lord does and it comes out in a Relaxed Mental Attitude not a bitter Mental Attitude.
  3. This is Paul's Relaxed Mental Attitude and all these people have deserted Paul and he does not care a single bit what they think about him.
  4. This was the case with our World War II Airborne Outfits and how when they were going to be deployed overseas at one point they threw a hell of a party and some of the guys married 2 or 3 women before leaving thinking they would be killed in action and the resulting paperwork was unbelievable and the reality was that they flatly did not give a damn.
  5. For Paul this is a totally relaxed Mental Attitude having the perspective that ONLY what the Lord thinks counts.
  6. What we must remember if we try to claim this Status Quo is that the LORD can see all the facts of the whole situation and whom one is trying to FAKE OUT with such a statement of false piety.
    - i. Never be too quick to say “I am doing my job as unto the lord” or “The Lord is my witness that I am right”.
    - ii. These pious phrases are simply used to impress people on the outside.

- B. All the believer in fact did desert Paul and could have gotten him freed but Paul's life does right on into dying grace and he knows that this is the Will of God.
1. He knows that the Lord did not desert him just the kooky reversionistic believers but this is alright because if anyone is going to keep Paul alive it is only the Lord.
  2. He knows that if the Lord has not deserted him then he knows that this is his time to depart this life and as a result why we have these dying words.
  3. The GRAMMAR here tells us that there IS NO ACCIDENT in the life of any Ultra Super Grace believer including Paul.
  4. It is no accident that all these phony reversionistic believers all deserted him because the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and Ultra Super Grace NEVER DEPEND ON PEOPLE.
  5. The only people who get hurt by people are those who depend on people.
  6. You cannot be hurt by people by their foibles and failures when you depend only on the Lord.
  7. Paul never indicated in this last morning report that the Lord had deserted him.
  8. He is totally aware of the fact that Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ controls Human History and he is MOVING from Ultra Super Grace into dying grace and he has been totally deserted by the Roman church who were totally phony jackasses.
- C. When you get to the place where you see people have foibles including SELF then you realize that you must depend on something greater than even the most Noble People and this is where Paul is in dying grace.
1. He has achieved something in dying which most people never achieve in all their living.
  2. This is the realization that the MORE Bible Doctrine you have in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul the more your eyes turn to the Lord and become under Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ in Category I Love.
  3. Under this Status Quo the less respect you have and depend on people for anything.
  4. The less you depend on people the fewer things you have to deal with in the terrible things which people will do to you especially if you reach Ultra Super Grace and get all the opposition.
  5. People will do all kinds of terrible things to you as part of your Ultra Super Grace mantle of opposition and your decorations but these things won't even phase you at all.
  6. These things only intensify your happiness since this is truly anchored in the Lord and when this is your Status Quo you don't have to run around and tell everyone that you are under Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and doing everything unto the Lord.
  7. It is the people who talk about doing these things WHO ARE NOT DOING THEM.
  8. When people feel that they have to talk about doing everything as unto the Lord and have to defend themselves with this statement there is obviously something wrong with them and IMMEDIATELY you know that they cannot be doing anything as unto the Lord for if they were they would be DOING it and not SAYING it.
  9. Watch out for that pious language for it is phony and false and blaspheme.
  10. Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ does not call for the principle that "Me thinkest thou protestith too much".
- D. "The Lord stood by me" is an idiom which is describing the faithfulness of the Lord toward the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.
1. The Lord poured into Paul STRENGTH when he was under such incredible pressure and this was REALITY.
  2. Paul's ministry of teaching and writing into the Canon was under the divine protection of the Lord personally in order that he might finish his ministry especially his written ministry before dying.

3. God is making sure that Paul stayed alive to finish up 2<sup>nd</sup> Timothy and Titus which were completed.
4. He will not leave this earth until his ministry of contribution to the Canon is completed and his writing is preserved and he receives time for this to occur.
5. Paul recognizes that he has some time for dying grace and this 4<sup>th</sup> chapter is his writing about his dying grace time.
6. This is the entire ministry of Paul to the civilized world at that time and refers to the people of the Roman Empire **Acts 18:6, 26:20, 1tim 2:7, 2tim 1:11**
7. All the people outside the borders of the Roman empire the people were called Barbarians.
8. As long as God has a plan for your life you will be KEPT alive.

E. Summary:

1. The objectives and goals of Paul's life were all accomplished before this greatest apostle was removed from time to eternity and the earth to heaven.
  - i. There is no such thing as any believer, especially those in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God, departing from this life until the objectives for his life are fulfilled.
  - ii. In the case of reversionists the objectives are canceled and other objectives come into play.
  - iii. God's objective for the reversionist is to discipline him and he keeps him alive in order to SPANK him very well since there is no Divine Discipline in heaven.
2. There was a strong possibility that Paul would not have written Titus nor 2<sup>nd</sup> Timothy and right in the middle of his trial Nero wanted to send Paul to the lions he not caring a bit about the Law.
3. However it was the objective of the Lord to keep Paul alive to write 2 more books Titus and 2<sup>nd</sup> Timothy
  - i. Therefore even though there was a mantle of opposition against Paul which included NERO the Lord gave Paul strength and time to write these 2 books.
  - ii. NO ONE INCLUDING THE MOST POWERFUL MAN IN THE WORLD CAN REMOVE ANY BELIEVER FROM HISTORY UNTIL THE LORD PERMITS IT.
  - iii. With all his power of the Roman empire and that of Satan ruler of the world behind him NERO could not touch Paul unless God permitted it in the matter of testing or Divine Discipline or decoration.

F. Even though NERO wanted to kill Paul and send him to the lions in the arena the Lord preserved Paul from that death.

1. Nero's attempt to throw Paul to the lions in the arena was frustrated by the Lord Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ personally intervening in history.
2. When it says "The Lord Stood By ME" there are 2 principles:
  - i. Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ controls Human History
  - ii. Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ is not going to permit any of his servants in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace or Ultra Super Grace even though all the forces of Satan are against him UNTIL his work is finished.
3. Paul had 2 more books to write and these were not completed therefore his ministry was not completed.
4. Right in the middle of his trial when NERO who was sending many believers to the Lions decided he was going to send Paul there too being bored with this whole trial and wanted to get rid of Paul but the LORD intervened and stopped the whole thing.
5. The details of this deliverance are not described ONLY the principle.
6. Everyone at the time knew about this but we don't need the details about it.



**G. The fact is that he was not thrown to the lions and the principle is that as long as God has a purpose for your life all hell cannot take you out of this world.**

1. Nero's revenge was most likely forestalled by the fact that Paul was BORN a Roman citizen and his lawyer proved it in court.
2. Roman citizens were only permitted to be executed by Decapitation or some other means but NOT crucified or thrown to lions or any other system of violent death.
3. This is divine blessing to the Ultra Super Grace believer.

**H. Principle:**

1. Until God is ready no person, power or angel can remove any member of the Royal Family of God from this life.
2. Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ controls Human History even though Satan is ruler of this world, therefore NO BELIEVER can be removed from this world apart from the sovereignty of God.
3. So Paul was not torn apart from lions in the arena but had a quiet pleasant death by decapitation on Via Ostia several months after he wrote this passage.

**2Tim 4:15**

**v15: also with reference to whom, Alexzandros the Metal Smith, you, yourself, be on guard or extremely alert, for he has strongly opposed, stood against, resisted for at least 15 years, our doctrines.**

**2Tim 4:16**

**v16: In my first, foremost, prominent, most important trial defense before Nero, not one believer made a public appearance in court and gave testimony on my behalf; but all these reversionistic believers in Rome deliberately abandoned or deserted me. May it not be charged to or against them!**

**2Tim 4:17**

**v17: Notwithstanding, in contrast to these deserting believers, the Lord Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ, stood by me and poured the strength or power into me, in order that through me the announcement or proclamation of the summary of my teaching of Bible Doctrine might be fully accomplished or completely fulfilled or known, even that all the Gentiles of the Roman Empire in contrast to Jews and Barbarians might hear and understand it. In fact I was snatched from the danger of, delivered, rescued from, the mouth of lion's.**

**Lesson #101      Series # 469      4/29/2019      2Tim 4:1**

- I. Book "Incredible Victory" by Walter Lord (Victory of the Battle of Midway)
  - A. Richard E Fleming Captain United States Marine Corps, Battle of Midway, Flight Officer Marine Scout Bombing Squadron 241, 4-5 June 1942
  - B. The men in our navy at this time were an unbelievably phenomenal group of men and it is because of them that we even exist today.
- II. "Loving his appearance" means a believer can love the Rapture of the Church not because one won't die but because it BEGINS ETERNITY. (**2Tim 4:8**)
  - A. This is living your life in the light of eternity and the rapture is not a way to get out of death.
  - B. If it is the Will of God for you to die and you have made it to Ultra Super Grace you will have the best death in the world and that will be a lot more fun than the rapture.
  - C. A Super Grace and Ultra Super Grace believer has so much Metabolized Bible Doctrine in their Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul that eternity becomes real.
    1. They are in a SUPER status of Super Grace or Ultra Super Grace and they realize that they do not know much about eternity there not being much available for us to know but they know that it has SURPASSING GRACE which goes above and beyond SUPER.
    2. They know that they are enjoying what they have so much they have an inkling of what eternity is all about.
    3. They therefore begin to live a life totally different than most believers and live their life in the light of the reality of eternity.
    4. ONE day is not much but days going on forever is amazing to think about especially when you will get to wear the decorations which glorify Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ for all that time.

5. To have a large area of the universe to control and use and to surpass all the blessings you had in Super Grace and Ultra Super Grace is a part of this great blessing.
6. This believer looks for the rapture NOT as a yellow cowardly jackass trying to avoid dying but as a person longing for eternity to start so that he can go from SUPER to SURPASSING of the super.

### III. Principle of Paul's Ultra Super Grace deliverance

- A. Paul will be leaving this life under dying grace and will not be thrown to the lions but a tranquil departure from life by decapitation.
- B. The Lord provides special protection and support for the Ultra Super Grace believers because they are always under maximum pressure from the satanic forces of EVIL.
  1. As a result of this pressure they are given incredible protection and an Ultra Super Grace believer under maximum opposition from even Satan himself is just as safe as any idiot who is not known even to the demons.
  2. The mantle of opposition includes many reversionistic believers and unbelievers under the influence of evil.
  3. This opposition intensifies the Super Grace blessing package.
  4. This mantle of opposition the Ultra Super Grace Cross is made up of everyone and anyone who opposes the Ultra Super Grace believer, here Paul.
  5. The more opposition they put us the greater becomes his blessing.
  6. The more they try to hurt him or destroy his ministry the more he is blessed and the greater becomes his ministry.
  7. GOD turns this cursing to blessing and works all these machinations of Evil into GOOD.
  8. The believer must remain alive to enjoy these intensified blessings so the LORD personally protects the Ultra Super Grace believer.
- C. As long as God wants the Ultra Super Grace believer alive he will not be vulnerable to anything or everything that all hell can deliver to him.
  1. The greatest security ever afforded to any member of the Human Race belongs to the Ultra Super Grace believer.
  2. These live in constant danger and have the best security and protection imaginable.
  3. However many Ultra Super Grace believers exist on the earth at any time on the earth they have total security in all situations.
- D. There is no security for the reversionist who is the greatest enemy of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ on the earth.
  1. The worst opposition anyone can have is from CHRISTIANS.
  2. The worst opposition that the Royal Family of God possesses on the earth is from the Royal Family of God.
  3. There is NOTHING in the life or on this earth than a reversionistic believer he is the worst of all.
  4. There never has been nor will be any believer who reaches Ultra Super Grace who does not have Direct Security from the Lord.
  5. For reversionists and immature believers there is indirect security having been assigned at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God to a guardian angel (Or a SQUAD of them)
  6. However the Guardian Angel is a creature and there are other creatures just as powerful in the fallen angel cadre, but the Lord is personally responsible for any Ultra Super Grace believer's security.
- E. Evil is the name of Satan's plan and policy as the ruler of this world.
  1. What Grace as the plan and policy of God is for the believer, EVIL is to the unbeliever and reversionist believer.
  2. Evil and Grace are mutually exclusive and antithetical and GRACE is the policy of God toward man and Evil is the policy of Satan as ruler of this world.

3. GRACE is the Modus Vivendi and Modus Operandi of God where EVIL is the Modus Vivendi and Modus Operandi of Satan.
  4. The whole concept of GRACE and EVIL is TOTAL antithesis.
- F. Grace is always the source of blessing to the believer while EVIL is always the source of cursing to the believer
1. This is because the soul of the believer is the battle ground for the Angelic Conflict in Human History.
  2. The Angelic Conflict is being resolved in the souls of the Human Race and this is why what you think is so important in this life.
  3. The words in our souls which form the vocabulary and doctrines and categories of GRACE is far more important than anything else.
  4. This is why Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ said, "Don't be afraid of what can destroy the body but be afraid of what can destroy the soul.
  5. Evil can infiltrate the soul and does when a believer falls into reversionism
  6. In addition the soul is depressed by things in the body but it does not have to be if there is Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the soul.
  7. What you think is related to your body, but doctrine will influence totally body functions.
  8. However, it is not what is in the body which will destroy the soul it is what is or is not in the soul.
    - i. Without Bible Doctrine and with EVIL the soul can be destroyed.
- G. David & Bathsheba
1. When David saw Bathsheba taking her bath he was a Super Grace believer and when he committed adultery with her he was in Super Grace and afterward he was still a Super Grace believer.
  2. David had his Super Grace blessing package and even during the whole problem with Bathsheba and we have 3 different rebound psalms for different occurrences related to Bathsheba.
  3. He was in effect rebounding and then getting out of fellowship again and again.
  4. He was under Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and never got away from it.
  5. He still had great capacity for life but his enjoyment of Sharing the Happiness of God flattened out when he had to weather 15 years of Divine Discipline for CARNALITY.
  6. David did not get away with anything but the point is that he was Carnal when he committed adultery and when he rebounded he was back in fellowship and this went on over and over again.
  7. However DAVID WAS NEVER UNDER THE INFLUENCE OF EVIL.
  8. David was a multi millionaire when he saw Bathsheba and when he married her and when he drew his last breath he still was a multi millionaire.
  9. He was the greatest military man of his age and the greatest king who ever lived and never lost either of these positions.
  10. DAVID WAS CARNAL BUT NOT EVIL.
  11. David never lost anything throughout the issues with Bathsheba and Uriah the Hittite's murder.
  12. David was a blessing to more people in 1 generation than most people would be in 1000 generations, all the soldiers, all the governmental administrators, all his wives, etc.
  13. The final touch for discipline for David FOR CARNALITY was the Absalom revolution.
  14. He had historical blessings and for every generation every king was compared to David and he was a stabilizing ROD for every generation of Israel down to the 5<sup>th</sup> cycle of Divine Discipline.
  15. Dying Grace Blessing? David died lying between 2 virgins?!!!!

16. This is OBVIOUSLY NOT the discipline of a person in reversionism under the influence of evil.
- H. There is a GREAT difference between carnality and the influence of evil.
1. David was in reversionism at one point at NOB and the lie to the priest which caused all the priests to be executed by Saul and how he faked madness at GAD to avoid execution.
  2. Carnality is being out of fellowship with God and out from under the Filling of God the Holy Spirit because of a Sin or SINS.
  3. Reversionism is thinking EVIL.
  4. A Thought makes or breaks you and beware of that which can destroy the soul.
  5. Fundamentalism is totally in reversionism today (1970s and much worse off today) and why it is so focused on carnality and why some say if you advance in the Spiritual Life far enough you will never sin again.
  6. Their whole concept of spiritual growth and Spiritual Maturity is NOT SINNING and this is simply false propaganda.
  7. No person ever in his entire life will ever stop sinning 1John 1.
- I. David rebounded with regard to Bathsheba several times but he had Divine Discipline right down the line.
1. He was able to take the Divine Discipline because of the rebound.
  2. The greatest Divine Discipline which came out of the Bathsheba situation was the Absalom revolution
  3. However at this time David was never more magnificent and when his Divine Discipline came as a believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace he was totally magnificent.
- J. We must constantly remember that we must emphasize the Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine and avoid all the thinking of Human Viewpoint and EVIL.
1. The only thing which counts in any ministry is Positive Volition and it does not make any difference whether there are 3 or 3000 together.
- K. During the Angelic Conflict related to Human History God has protections and safeguards against EVIL.
1. The safeguards against sin is spiritual growth which insures you will change your brand of sin from time to time.
    - i. Evil however is what destroys you.
  2. Laws of Divine Establishment which is designed to protect the volition of the entire Human Race.
    - i. You can only have freedom when in a group of 50,000 others who are all free when there are systems of discipline and authority which protects your freedom.
    - ii. The Laws of Divine Establishment set up authority to protect your freedoms.
    - iii. You should learn about freedom from your father and mother first.
    - iv. We must listen to the people who are in authority over us and this is how we first were to learn about freedom.
    - v. We must be taught to respect the property of others and the freedom of others and the privacy of others.
    - vi. There must be strict discipline of misbehaving children in order that they learn authority for them to be able to properly exercise freedom when around others who are also free.
    - vii. We should always respect and honor police officers and we must respect the UNIFORMS of our military services both which symbolize our freedom.
    - viii. For these 2 areas of life to function properly it takes a great deal of discipline to win wars and curtail crime so that we can have our freedom, privacy and property along with the right to go as far as our dull wits can take us.

- ix. The Laws of Divine Establishment is the means of protection of FREEDOM for everyone.
- 3. Bible Doctrine but not what is stored in the original languages of scripture since this will be preserved forever.
  - i. It must be Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
  - ii. In every generation believers under Positive Volition will cause the preparation of some Pastor Teachers who will dig into the languages.
  - iii. The Spiritual Gift of Pastor Teacher is the gift of studying, being a student, of analyzing a book and extracting what is there in the divine policies of GRACE and communicating them.
- L. Divine Deliverance is therefore accomplished through these systems:
  - 1. For the Believer
    - i. Through the Laws of Divine Establishment
    - ii. Through Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
    - iii. OR the divine intervention of the Sovereignty of God for the reversionist.
- M. The highest decoration a believer can receive in time is the mantle of opposition worn by the Ultra Super Grace believer. **Phil 3:10, 2Tim 3:4-12**
  - 1. As a result of this we must consider EVIL again since some of the most pious things we can hear are EVIL, some of the nicest deeds ever done are EVIL, Some things which we admire the most are directly from Satan who is far smarter than any member of the Human Race.
  - 2. Our only hope is to live withing the framework of the Laws of Divine Establishment and enjoy our freedom and amass Metabolized Bible Doctrine in our Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
- N. Through the function of the Laws of Divine Establishment and Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul of the believer the LORD will preserve the believer in this life.

**Lesson #102      Series # 469      5/4/2019      2Tim 4:18**

- I. Advance of the Believer from infancy to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.
  - A. This begins at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God PHASE I where the unbeliever enters into the family of God and in the Church Age under the function of the Baptism of God the Holy Spirit this infant believer becomes part of the Royal Family of God.
    - 1. Part of SAVING GRACE is the provision for every person who uses his Positive Volition to express FAITH alone in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ ALONE of 39 irrevocable assets and the Filling of God the Holy Spirit. **Eph 2:8-9**
  - B. At this point the believer enters PHASE II as a believer in time and the objective for every believer is to move from SPIRITUAL INFANCY to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God through the constant intake of Bible Doctrine.
  - C. The battleground for the Angelic Conflict is the SOUL of the individual believer in which we have:
    - 1. Self Consciousness == The awareness of your own existence, the EGO.
    - 2. Thinking Processes in 2 frontal lobes of the soul.
      - i. Left Lobe of the Soul == (gr) Nous
        - a. Knowledge here is (gr) GNOSIS
      - ii. Right Lobe of the Soul == (gr) Kardia or (heb) Leb == Heart
        - a. Knowledge here is (gr) EPIGNOSIS
        - b. HEART is uses as it describes the function of the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul where by Bible Doctrine is processed and circulated through the compartments of the soul.

- iii. Structure of the Heart and Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul
  - a. There are 4 chambers in the Heart and basically there are 4 chambers in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul
    - i ) Frame of Reference with its MEMORY CENTER
    - ii ) Vocabulary & Categorical Storage
    - iii ) norms and standards formed by thinking with words
    - iv ) Launch Pad or application center by which you apply thinking to reality.
  - b. Volition with its + and – aspects where the + aspects contributes to the salvation and spiritual growth of the believer.
  - c. Emotion lacking the ability to THINK and is NOT RATIONAL and is equivalent to the FEMALE and is therefore the female part of the soul whose role like that of the FEMALE is to respond to the rational thinking of the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul
    - i ) This is the responder for everything in life and the appreciator for all the thoughts and categories which reside in your soul and for whatever norms and standards exist in the conscience of the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
    - ii ) In a normal life EMOTION responds to what is in the Right Lobe.
    - iii ) In a distorted life EMOTION takes over the control of the soul and divorces the person from reality.
- 3. The soul is the place where the believer grows up in the Spiritual Life.
  - i. You do not grow to Spiritual Maturity by logging a certain amount of time as a believer in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ but by your constant intake of Bible Doctrine.
  - ii. Spiritual Maturity is measured not by time in grade but by the amount or level of Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
- D. Therefore every believer starts the Spiritual Life under “Saving Grace” and moves immediately into Living or Logistical Grace.
  - 1. Logistical Grace is the provision from God for you for all that it takes for you to obtain and metabolize Bible Doctrine into your Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
  - 2. Living in the world ruled by the devil who is totally HOSTILE toward believer requires the POWER of God to provide for us what is needed for our spiritual advance.
    - i. Life
    - ii. Sustaining Life, Food, Shelter, Clothing
    - iii. What is required for acquiring and staying under the teaching of Bible Doctrine.
    - iv. The Place to get that teaching as the local church or in our case R. B. Thieme Bible Ministries.
    - v. The RIGHT Pastor Teacher who is able to teach you Bible Doctrine.
    - vi. The preservation of the TEXTBOOK of the Canon of Scripture
    - vii. the Objective of living Grace is to reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.
  - 3. Spiritual Maturity has several categories:
    - i. Super Grace == the point of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.
      - a. Where a Super Grace package of 5 categories of blessing are received
        - i ) Spiritual
        - ii ) Temporal
        - iii ) Association
        - iv ) Historical

v ) Dying

- ii. No Man's Land of the transition from Super Grace to Ultra Super Grace.
- iii. Ultra Super Grace == the area of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God where all the blessings of the Super Grace package are vastly intensified by the opposition of Satan and his agencies.
- iv. Dying Grace where the transition from Life on the earth to LIFE in ETERNITY is accomplished by the greatest blessings imaginable.
- v. Surpassing Grace == the blessings of eternity which are incomprehensibly greater than anything we can imagine in time. Eph
  - a. This goes on for ever and ever.
  - b. The believer who reaches Ultra Super Grace begins to understand after significant spiritual growth that what he has received in time as incredible blessing is to be FAR GREATER for him in eternity.
  - c. This results in his LIVING LIFE IN THE LIGHT OF ETERNITY.
- vi. This is only true and available to those who are consistent in the Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine over a prolonged period of time.

4. For those who do not make spiritual advance in time there is "REVERSIONISM" for which there is:

- i. Warning Divine Discipline
- ii. Intensive Divine Discipline
- iii. Dying Divine Discipline
- iv. Then entrance into Eternity with the Lord.
- v. This is the believer who fails in the consistent Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine and gets into some system of human effort for spirituality and spiritual growth
- vi. As a result of this he is kept alive for Divine Discipline by God by which God expresses his love for this category of believer in an attempt to get him to return to the Plan of God.
- vii. This results in the entire Christian life of the reversionist being one of great misery.
- viii. There are however periods of -H or Minus Happiness a system of happiness where there are periods of stimulation which are eventually removed and is ultimately used as part of the Divine Discipline
- ix. However this person having expressed Positive Volition Faith in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ Alone will end this life by passing over to eternity face to face with the Lord with Ultimate Sanctification of a Resurrection Body minus the Old Sin Nature and minus Human Good.

II. The dying deposition of Paul an Ultra Super Grace believer in Dying Grace.

- A. Nero wanted Paul thrown to the lions but a Roman Citizen can only be executed in 2 ways.
  - 1. Suicide after warning by the Senate
  - 2. Decapitation which was Paul's situation on Via Ostia
- B. He has pointed out how the reversionists had deserted him at his trial and would not testify for him but that he did not want that held against them.
  - 1. In the Christian Way of Life the worst enemies one will have are reversionistic believer IF you are under constant Positive Volition and reach yourself Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.
- C. Paul is pointing out in v18 that the Lord Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ as GOD controls Human History and even though the most powerful man in the world wanted him to be killed by the lions he was not and was preserved by the Lord in order to complete his ministry.
  - 1. The Lord overruled the whims of NERO the Caesar ruling Rome at this time.

2. Paul has received the highest decoration of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Ultra Super Grace as the Mantle of Opposition from satanic forces.
    - i. It included Alexander the metal smith, the Judiazers who killed him and he was resuscitated, the 40 assassins who wanted to kill him, Pigelus and Hermogenes.
    - ii. These people all only intensified his blessing in time.
- D. For anyone who reaches this level of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Ultra Super Grace this situation applies to them as well and the LORD WILL deliver or rescue from EVERY EVIL WORK.
1. EVIL is the name of the plan and policy of SATAN for this world.
  2. Our first recognition of this as the plan and policy of Satan for ruling this world is in Gen 2: when man had a relationship with God based on CREATION.
  3. EVIL is a very common thing in the bible but is mostly misunderstood.
  4. EVIL is a thought or system of thought and therefore what someone thinks.
  5. SIN is not evil but can become evil and is an expression of the area of weakness of the Old Sin Nature.
    - i. Mental Attitude Sins and these although distinguished as a separate and distinct category CROSSES over into EVIL as a result of being thinking.
    - ii. Verbal Sins
    - iii. Overt Sins
  6. EVIL is a technical word in the bible representing the whole function and action of Satan as ruler of this world.
- E. GEN 2 has 4 categories of trees:
1. Good for the EYE and designed to be good for the Aesthetics of the Soul, the CULTURE of the perfect environment of the garden
  2. Good for FOOD designed to sustain the body
  3. Tree Of LIVES indicating the Human Spirit part of the trichotomous man and was his capacity as a created adult to appreciate the environment of the garden.
    - i. These 3 were provided by God for Adam and later Ishah.
  4. Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil as the plan and policy of Satan to take over rulership of this world.
    - i. This was permitted by God as the TEST for the Angelic Conflict.
    - ii. Man was created for the sole purpose to resolve the Angelic Conflict
    - iii. Man's volition of the soul his free will which will resolve the Angelic Conflict.
    - iv. There is NO volition required in the 3 categories of trees provided by God they were there whether man wanted to use them or NOT.
    - v. This was the plan of Satan to rule this world his having been ruler of it prior to it being packed in ice a LONG time ago.
    - vi. This Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil requires a choice for man for or against it.
- F. The Plan and policy of Satan is built around 2 things:
1. EVIL
    - i. This is the thought part of the plan and its motivation.
  2. Human Good
    - i. This is the function part of the plan
  3. The one thing man did not ever need in his creation relationship with God was Knowledge of Good and Evil
  4. God warned Man and Ishah that if he would EAT from this tree to gain this knowledge, the day he would he would DIE spiritually.
  5. The moment these 2 parents of the Human Race ate this fruit they instantly had a total knowledge of Good and Evil.



6. At this instant Satan became ruler of this world again and under his rule Adam and Ishah knowing the new rules had to produce and they did produce Human Good in Operation Fig Leaves.
7. KNOWING EVIL the plan and policy of Satan they now had the information and motivation to produce Human Good and they did it.
8. Human Good always follows EVIL as motivation for it.
9. EVIL is the thought and Human Good is the action.

III. Look at the Unites States of America and how our forefathers founded it:

- A. The col had a relative who owned the whole Washington county of Pennsylvania and raised a company and fought throughout the entire first war for independence.
- B. The fighting in that war was based on upholding the principles of freedom and the principle was WON because we WON that war.
  1. All FREEDOM COMES THROUGH MILITARY VICTORY UNDER THE Laws of Divine Establishment.
  2. This is just as much a LAW as GRAVITY which is not a scientific law but just as much a part of the Laws of Divine Establishment as FREEDOM.
  3. Science did not create gravity and cannot ensure its continued proper function but simply discovered the principles of what God set up to enable us to STICK onto this planet earth.
  4. We have freedom because of another law which is Military Preparation and resultant victory in war.
- C. Then the forefathers set up a new nation under a GREAT constitution which is VERY GOOD but could have been improved a bit especially if Alexander Hamilton had had more input to it.
  1. It is good with the exception of the concept, which Thomas Jefferson did not even believe himself, when he said all citizens would be FREE but when he said they were BORN EQUAL that was an error.
  2. No one is ever born or in any way ever to be construed to be EQUAL and there is no such thing as Equality at birth or at any stage of living in the world of Satan.
  3. There is however FREEDOM because GOD has superimposed the Laws of Divine Establishment on the world of Satan.
- D. Principles of Freedom:
  1. The individual has the right to PRIVATE PROPERTY
  2. The individual has the right to PRIVACY without which there can be NO FREEDOM.
  3. The Individual has the right to advance or succeed as far in life as he can under his own initiatives and abilities without any hindrance.
  4. It recognized and provided for a Military Establishment
  5. It provided for an economic system of FREE ENTERPRISE without ANY government interference.
- E. Under this constitution the FEDERAL GOVERNMENT was (no longer is) the administrative SERVANT of the sovereign states not their ruler.
  1. Our founding fathers distrusted STRONG central government (Oh! God where they here at this time) having seen and experienced the evil unfair rulership of George III in England over the colonies.
  2. The federal government had no right and as yet has no right to do anything except administer in certain fields where our PRIVACY is INVADED as in:
    - i. Certain kinds of CRIME
      - a. Murder which destroys volition and freedom
  3. Privacy and Free Enterprise DEMAND that the federal government keep its hands OFF of Big Business.
    - i. The government has no right to tell any business who they can hire or fire
    - ii. They have not right to cut down military preparation in any way.

- iii. However MOST if not all LAWS passed by our congress in the past 50 or 60 years were the do goody legislators trying to DO GOOD for People and solve their problems for them.
  - iv. This is the function of the Satanic Policy of EVIL motivating the good being performed as it was in the garden.
    - a. Welfare State Functions is totally EVIL
    - b. Socialism is totally EVIL
    - c. Ecology is is totally EVIL saying GOD is incapable of running his own creation.
    - d. Cutting down military establishment functions is totally EVIL
    - e. Labor Unions are totally EVIL
  - v. Various functions where federal government bureaucracies dictate policies to business.
    - a. ONLY the executives in any business can dictate policy to their own business.
    - b. Nationalizing Businesses
    - c. Preventing the firing of jackass employees
    - d. Requiring the Hiring of jackass employees which are incompetent and incapable of doing the work required of them.
- F. Good and Evil is what came from the tree in the garden prohibited by God.
1. Man is under a creation relationship with God in the garden and under it God provides everything for man from his love with the EXCEPTION of ONE single prohibition, Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil the policy of Satan.
  2. Eventually man chose for the policy of Satan and immediately Satan took over rulership of the world and MAN immediately acquired the Old Sin Nature.
    - i. Man did not SIN first after the transgression and acquisition of the Old Sin Nature he performed an act of Human Good, Operation Fig Leaves.
    - ii. This was based on knowledge of Evil and at this point man was spiritually DEAD and without relationship with God of any sort.
  3. In order to participate the the resolution of the Angelic Conflict Man had to have a relationship with God therefore the Cross was provided for man to LOOK FORWARD to in **Gen 3:15**
    - i. At the time of the presentation of the OPTION for the cross Adam and Ishah believed in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and reentered a relationship with God but NOW based on contact with the Justice of God in a relationship called Regeneration.
  4. Under Regeneration at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God you enter the Plan of God with the policy called GRACE
    - i. The policy of Satan is Good and Evil
    - ii. There is therefore, GRACE and good from the function of Grace
    - iii. There is also EVIL and good from the function of evil.
    - iv. EVIL is totally antithetical to GRACE and these 2 fight for domination in YOUR SOUL
    - v. Evil is a system of THOUGHT and GRACE also is a system of Thought.
    - vi. The source of the Grace system of thought is the Genius of God
    - vii. The source of the Evil system of thought is the genius of Satan.
    - viii. They fight over the soul of the believer since domination here is what determines the resolution of the Angelic Conflict.
    - ix. The believer is given a special apparatus for learning Bible Doctrine since the principles of Grace thinking is found in Bible Doctrine and as he LEARNS Bible Doctrine he orients to Grace in the Plan of God and matures.

- x. If the believer rejects Bible Doctrine there is a vacuum which opens in the soul into which EVIL is SUCKED in and he begins to think and operate just like Satan wants him to think as an unbeliever things and this has resulted in many believers becoming agents of Satan.
  - xi. This is why believers can be called “Enemies of the Cross” because they are totally influence by Evil.
    - a. We see this in many of our legislators and how they vote against the principles of Grace of the Laws of Divine Establishment.
    - b. This has led to the systematic destruction by the government of freedom in the United States of America.
    - c. As goes Big Corporate business so goes our freedoms
    - d. As goes the Military so goes our freedoms.
    - e. This is a real problem in our nation with regard to contemporary history.
    - f. EVIL is a statue of Martin Luther King a communist conspirator who was an enemy of this country, having a HOLIDAY for the same is total EVIL.
- G. Grace is always the source of blessing to the believer while EVIL is always the source of Cursing for the believer.
- 1. In the historical phase of the Angelic Conflict we have ways given us to protect us from evil.
    - i. Laws of Divine Establishment
    - ii. Bible Doctrine preserved by God for our protection
  - 2. Bible Doctrine is the ONLY insulation between the believer and EVIL.
  - 3. For the believer all divine deliverance is related to Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
    - i. When you reach Status Quo Ultra Super Grace then GOD personally intervenes with protection for that believer.
  - 4. For the Ultra Super Grace believer 2Tim 4:18 is a promise of security and deliverance.
    - i. The LORD always personally protects the Ultra Super Grace believer.
- H. As a member of the Royal Family of God in the Church Age the Lord protects and delivers the Ultra Super Grace believer into his HEAVENLY kingdom.
- 1. This is a glance behind the curtain of Eternity which is effectively and purposefully obscured by God for there is no vocabulary which we possess to actually describe it.
  - 2. Heaven is beyond our ability to ask about it or even think about it.
  - 3. ONLY in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace or Ultra Super Grace does the believer even get a glimpse into eternity as they realize that they have something far GREATER waiting for them than their Super Grace package of blessings for time.
  - 4. This is surpassing grace blessings in eternity which are greater than Super Grace or Ultra Super Grace in time.
- I. Having experienced deliverance from God in 3 categories of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Paul can only conclude ONE thing considering this Status Quo.
- 1. Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ who controls Human History decides when any believer will leave this life and it is a strict matter of his sovereign will.
  - 2. He decides the time, manner, and place of each believers physical death.
  - 3. God is glorified by the advance of the believer to Ultra Super Grace
  - 4. God is glorified by blessings for the believer in Ultra Super Grace.
  - 5. God is glorified by the attainment of the tactical victory of the believer to match the Strategic victory of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ on the cross his resurrection and ascension and session with God the Father.
  - 6. God is glorified by PRESERVATION of every believer whether spiritual or carnal, reversionistic or advancing, Super Grace or Ultra Super Grace.

7. God preserves the reversionist for administration of Divine Discipline for them and to use them to challenge and test advancing Believers.
  - i. The advancing believer must be able to overcome any bitter experience, antagonisms or adversities related to the reversionist believer and maintain his focus on Bible Doctrine.
  - ii. There is no Divine Discipline in heaven therefore reversionists have to get it all while they are alive.
8. Paul has been as all Ultra Super Grace believer given maximum blessing in time.
  - i. Paul has the highest honor and glory in time and the plan of grace carries ETERNAL glory with it as well.
  - ii. The glory of time is not the same as glory in eternity which is infinitely greater than that of time.
  - iii. The glory in time for the Super Grace and Ultra Super Grace believer is a very small down payment for what he will receive in eternity.

#### IV. Doctrine of GLORY:

##### A. Definition:

1. (heb) kabodh == honor or glory, riches, wealth, abundance, nobility, majesty and splendor
  - i. Therefore GLORY always connotes Honor, Distinction, Greatness, Fame, Renown, being Illustrious, Eminence, nobility and majesty.
2. (gr) Doxza == the same connotations as the Hebrew.
3. It is the sum total of divine blessing realized by the mature believer in time in anticipation of infinitely greater blessing in eternity.
  - i. Glory first emphasizes the source of the blessing as God who provides maximum blessing for the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and Ultra Super Grace in time WITHOUT compromise to his essence in any way.
  - ii. Glory or Honor indicates that the character of God remains intact in doing this for the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.
  - iii. This is true whether the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God is spiritual or carnal and God is glorified and does not compromise his character when he allows the Super Grace to retain their blessings when they enter carnality.;
  - iv. Therefore there must be some link between the perfect character of God NOT being compromised and maximum blessing for the believer in time and it comes through the principle of GRACE.
4. Grace starts at the cross where the Righteousness of God is satisfied by the Righteousness of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ on the cross, the Justice of God is satisfied by the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ on the cross.
  - i. With the Righteousness of God and Justice of God satisfied God is free to:
    - a. LOVE anyone who comes to the cross as a believer
    - b. Give them Eternal Life
    - c. Protect them under his omniscience and Omnipotence
    - d. to Oversee them personally through omnipresence
    - e. with immutability guaranteeing the stability of this
    - f. With veracity guaranteeing the policies are compatible with all his perfection and character and that God is always fair and just not being able to be unfair or unjust.

##### B. Glory is used for the Essence of God **Deut 5:24**,

1. In spite of the failure and reversionism of Israel and their revolt the believers still lived and God did not destroy it and it continues to the present.

- i. He was able to preserve Israel and still maintain his character because the Jews made Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God.
2. David Said in **Ps 21:5**
  - i. The Essence of God was able to give Israel GREAT victories in battle over philistines and his character was kept intact by the slaughter of the Philistines and driving them out of the land and the slaughter of Moab and Ammon and Edom and Syrians ETC.
  - ii. This military victory was totally compatible with the character of God and many thousands and hundreds of thousands died during the Davidic Wars YET their death was not incompatible with the Justice of God but totally compatible.
  - iii. The enemy who dies is totally compatible with the Righteousness of God and he cannot be wrong and therefore when you face the communists and moslems you shoot to KILL in compatibility with the Righteousness of God.
    - a. “Thou Shalt NOT kill” is in fact You should not murder.
  - iv. This is totally compatible with ever aspect of the character and Essence of God and it is never compromised by military victory.
3. All personal human Sin is failure to measure up to the character of God. **Rom 3:23**
  - i. Sin must be defined in 2 ways:
    - a. Categorically as
      - i ) Mental
      - ii ) Verbal
      - iii ) Overt
      - iv ) In terms of Crime
      - v ) In terms of Establishment
      - vi ) In terms of Freedom
      - vii ) in many other ways.
    - b. The higher definition of Sin is in fact failure to measure up to the Absolute Righteousness of God.
      - i ) It is failure to measure up to the perfection of God
  - ii. Since man cannot and does not do so we understand that “all have come short of the glory of God”.
4. Man’s creation relationship with God ended when he chose the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil
  - i. His punishment was to be DEATH but not physical death, just Spiritual Death.
  - ii. Being spiritually dead the only way to enter a relationship with God is through Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God regeneration.
5. Review the ORIGIN OF LIFE:
  - i. LIFE BEGINS AT PHYSICAL BIRTH WHEN GOD IMPUTES SOUL LIFE INTO THE FORMAT SOUL OF EVERY FETUS WHICH ENTERS THE WORLD IN PHYSICAL BIRTH.
  - ii. GOD can give physical life but at physical birth the fetus has an Old Sin Nature and God therefore cannot give it Spiritual Life at physical birth.
  - iii. Therefore in order for every person to have spiritual life after birth he must make Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God through faith alone in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ alone accepting his Substitutionary Spiritual Death on our behalf.
  - iv. The Old Sin Nature manifests as SIN from the area of weakness and manifests as Human Good from the area of strength and the thinking of EVIL all a part of spiritual death.

- v. Therefore ALL sins were judged on the cross since they are produced by the HUMAN Old Sin Nature and not part of the plan or policy of Satan in the Angelic Conflict which is EVIL manifest as Human Good.
  - vi. Human Good and Evil were rejected at the cross since these as the plan and policy of Satan must continue to the end of and resolution of the Angelic Conflict.
  - vii. Now the believer after Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God has Eternal Life and the sin problem has been solved and though all have sinned and come short of the glory of God and the wages of Sin is death this payment was made by the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ on the cross.
  - viii. This is being BORN again at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God when God the Holy Spirit provides a replacement Human Spirit for each new believer.
- 6. The father of glory Eph 1:17**
- i. There are 3 persons who have the same Essence of God, God the Father, God the Son, God the Holy Spirit.
  - ii. When the bible says God is ONE this refers to the Essence of God
  - iii. When the bible distinguishes between member of the trinity then the plurality is emphasized by:
    - a. Jehovah which is a singular title for each individual
    - b. Elohim is a plural and applies to the Essence of God and Since there are 3 persons with this essence the IM indicates at the end that it refers to all of them as a plurality.
    - c. For only one individual member of the trinity you can have Jehovah the Father or Jehovah the Son or Jehovah the Holy Spirit
  - iv. The Father of Glory is also the God of our Lord Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ the Planner of creation and history.
  - v. Review the inculcation of Bible Doctrine via Operation Z and the assimilation of Epignosis Doctrine
  - vi. Review the difference between KNOWING something and UNDERSTANDING it, with reference to Bible Doctrine it is the difference between Gnosis vs Epignosis.
  - vii. In order to grow in the Spiritual Life or communicate Bible Doctrine you must understand it as Epignosis Doctrine.
- C. God wants each believer to have an epignosis understanding of Bible Doctrine and this is HOW God the Father is glorified by the life of the believer.**
- 1. Therefore it is obvious that the issue is NOT doing or working or producing in the Spiritual Life and it is not the means of reaching Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God
  - 2. It is the words of Bible Doctrine which when inculcated into the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul as epignosis Bible Doctrine that brings Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.

**2Tim 4:18**

**v18: The Lord God Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ himself shall deliver, snatch from danger or rescue me and any Ultra Super Grace believer from all or every EVIL work or deed and shall continue to preserve or deliver me into or for his heavenly kingdom. The Lord to whom is the glory for ever and ever. Amen.**

**Lesson #103      Series # 469      5/4/2019      2Tim 4:18**

- I. Doctrine of Glory Continued:
  - A. Glory is used for the indwelling of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ **Col 1:27**
    - 1. This deals with divine decree and how it is fulfilled through the intake of Bible Doctrine.

2. God the Father decreed to make known his wealth and this is the “Glory” of the mystery and is used for the Essence of God the Father to those in the Roman empire.
3. Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ indwells every believer and this gives confidence with regard to the glory which God the Father has provided for all believers, the “glory of his riches”.
4. The indwelling of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ is a guarantee that these are available and any believer who persists in Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine WILL receive the “glory” of these riches.

B. Glory is used to describe the Maturity of the Believer:

1. From the basis of his recognition of Glory as a mature believer **Eph 1:5-6**
  - i. Glory is recognized for the believer who has grown toward and into Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and Ultra Super Grace
  - ii. This is from the source of his GRACE and by which he has purchased us in GRACE.
2. Riches of maturity are from the glory of God **Eph 1:17-18, Eph 3:16, Phil 4:19, 1Pet 1:7-8**
  - i. God the Father’s (return to Point 2) Glory referring to the Essence of God the father.
  - ii. We gain wisdom from the FULL understanding given us from him of the revelation he has provided for us.
  - iii. Riches are related to Glory and the source of all wealth is the Essence of God and since the Essence of God is GLORY the wealth he provides is GLORY as well.
  - iv. We receive wealth upon reaching Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace in our Super Grace package of blessings which includes Dying Grace.
  - v. Then after Dying Grace we then WILL receive Surpassing Grace blessings which are beyond description.
  - vi. We then can understand that GLORY is used to describe the blessings provided for EVERY believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.
  - vii. The source of everything we have as a blessing is from the Essence of God.
  - viii. Essence is Glory therefore what is provided is Glory and what is provided is described as WEALTH and is what we receive in Super Grace blessings.
  - ix. These things are given TOTALLY APART FROM SATAN and from any human merit, ability, works or activity or effort of any time.
  - x. This is also Going from Glory to Glory.
  - xi. Glory is the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace or Ultra Super Grace and they means of going from this glory to GLORY is by dying grace and the final GLORY is Surpassing Grace blessings and decorations for eternity.
  - xii. This believer therefore has Glory in time in the form of Divine blessings provided in grace and then he will have Glory for all eternity in the form of Divine Wealth provided also by Grace.
  - xiii. This is the concept of 2<sup>nd</sup> Tim 4 which is that ONCE YOU REACH Super Grace and move forward toward and into Ultra Super Grace you begin to realize that you have the best of everything and in eternity it can only be MUCH better and why these blessings are termed “SURPASSING”.
  - xiv. These blessings surpass SUPER and beyond anything which can be put into human language and in eternity we will enjoy as a believer who has reached Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God in time the phenomenal wealth in every category which comes from the Grace of God under his wisdom.

- xv. The blessings of time are so fantastic but in Super Grace or Ultra Super Grace the believer realizes that the WEALTH of Time will be multiplied and intensified for all eternity.
  - xvi. 'Riches in Glory' refers to the fact that EVERY blessing which you will have in time in any category are all from the Essence of God which is perfect and his perfect essence can only provide perfect blessing and while we are IMPERFECT beings GRACE has found a way to provide for us perfect blessing in time KNOWN to us and PERFECT blessing for eternity NOT KNOWN to us.
  - xvii. This future glory we can receive is commendation, glory and honor occurring at the Judgment Seat of Jesus Christ.
  - xviii. This believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace or Ultra Super Grace LOVES Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ though he cannot see him.
  - xix. Not only is the Essence of God called glory but the blessings provided for the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God is also called GLORY.
- C. Glory is used to describe the strategic victory of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ in the Angelic Conflict **Heb 2:10, 1Tim 3:16**
- 1. Glory in Heb refers to the blessings of ETERNITY to which many believers are said to be LED.
    - i. Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ was brought to the cross in order that we might receive GLORY or BLESSING in both time and eternity.
    - ii. The fact that we have made Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God means that we SHOULD take the road to glory which is Saving Grace, Living or Logistical Grace and then Super Grace and then Ultra Super Grace and then Dying Grace and then Surpassing Grace which is Glory here.
  - 2. There is glory for time and glory for eternity
    - i. The Glory for time starts as Super Grace blessings
    - ii. The Glory eternity is Surpassing Grace blessings
    - iii. These are linked "from glory to Glory by Dying Grace.
- D. Glory is used to describe the indescribable as well as the attainable and because of this the Royal Family of God is called to ETERNAL GLORY **1Pet 5:10, 2Pet 1:3**
- 1. The Royal Family of God is all called to eternal glory in eternity.
- E. Therefore the Resurrection Body is described in terms of eternal glory, **1Cor 15:43, 2Thes 2:14**
- 1. When you stand in Resurrection Body in eternity you will possess the glory of our Lord Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
- F. Human Glory is the Right Woman described as the GLORY of her right man, **1Cor 11:6-7, 14-15**
- 1. No long haired idiotic MALE can properly represent what God intended in the MALE.
    - i. Long hair in the male is a sign of failure in this area.
    - ii. Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ nor the Romans in their strong days nor have any great people ever kept long hair on his head.
    - iii. HAIR is not for men to be an attractive thing but is for women.
    - iv. This is fascinating since MEN can grow hair all over their head and face.
  - 2. Any time a nation starts into decadence just look at the MALE and if he sports LONG hair he is out of line and long hair belongs to a woman as a RESPONDER to her right man and a sign that she is responding.
    - i. Therefore the WOMAN'S hair should be LONGER than that of her man.
    - ii. Bible Doctrine and NATURE also teaches that if a MALE has long hair it is a DISHONOR to him.
    - iii. If the woman has long hair it is a GLORY to her.
  - 3. The reason that men wear long hair is as a result of them being SLAVES and FREAKS in their souls being completely and totally out of line.



- i. This is not a matter of personal taste for men but it is a BIBLICAL principle and truth.
- 4. Women having their hair cut off or their head shaved was used in the bible times for women who have been prostitutes
  - i. The long hair of the woman is a sign that she is under the authority of her right man.
  - ii. For men BALD and CREW CUT is beautiful.
  - iii. The woman who tells a man that he looks great with his long flowing locks of hair is an IDIOT and she needs to see men as they should be seen.

**1Cor 11:6-7, 14-15**

**v6: For if the woman does not cover her head with her long hair, let her also have her hair cut off, but it is disgraceful or indecent for a woman to have her hair cut off or have her head shaved (uses for convicted prostitutes), Therefore let her cover her head with long hair longer than her husbands.**

**1Cor 11:7 (Male coverings)**

**v7: For indeed a man ought not to have his head covered with long hair since he is the image and glory of God, but the woman is the glory of the Man (parenthesis)**

**v14: Does not even nature itself, (laws of God) communicate or teach to all of you that if a man has long hair it is a dishonor to him and he has no integrity,**

**v15: but if a woman has long hair it is a glory to her because of her orientation to life, because her hair has been given to her instead of a veil.**

- 5. The woman is described as the glory of her Right Man and glory is the key to her and her hair is a glory and her hair is glorious.
  - i. There is nothing more glorious and attractive than the woman who has been constantly under attack for many decades in this nation.
  - ii. It is imperative to follow these biblical concepts with regard to women.
  - iii. At his time in England the Aristocracy was FED UP with the HIPPIES and they were going back to SHORT hair in the males in order to be distinguished from the peasants.

G. There are additional uses of GLORY in the bible:

- 1. It is used to describe the WONDERS of the Universe **1Cor 15:40-41.**
- 2. The woman is described as GLORY and the only way a man can be considered to be or have glory is through Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God and advance to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace.
- 3. There is no natural glory in the man and the natural glory is in the woman and stars and skies.
- 4. The woman's human glamour is natural glory **1Pet 1:24, Phil 3:19**
- 5. Glory is therefore used for everything from the Essence of God to natural types of glamour.

H. God is glorified and receives glory forever in the deliverance of the Ultra Super Grace believer **2Tim 4:18**

- 1. The Lord has glory and reveals it by deliverance of the Ultra Super Grace believer.

II. V19-20 the roster of Super Grace heroes.

A. This is the short Hair Cut crowd on the outside and maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine on the inside

B. Super Grace Heroes in Ephesus

- 1. The greeting of the ancient world was a salute which could occur in many ways not hand shakes
  - i. The Roman way was Clenched Fist over the Chest
  - ii. The Romans also Clenched the forearm of a very close friend
  - iii. Effeminate Men would Kiss like the Arabs do when they Greet.
  - iv. The ladies often use the "holy Kiss" but the Col indicated that he could never come up with a holy kiss application and HIS kisses were always unholy and also

- that he never had any complaints about that. (as you can imagine there was a great deal of laughter from the congregation)
- v. Southern ladies PRESS cheeks which makes us wince and groan.
  - vi. Hand salutes originated from Knights lifting their visors and different cultures do it different ways.
2. The Plutarch uses this verb for the paying homage by acclamations **Mk 15:18**
  3. This is used for VERBAL as well as POSTURAL saluting
  4. The concept is to focus attention on these Super Grace heroes and give special recognition to these believers
- C. Prisca and Aquila reached Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace as husband and wife and were maintaining this Status Quo.
1. They should be a great example of Quarreling Families and remember these 2 made it to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God together and for those who quarrel through life it just takes LONGER for them.
  2. Along with the family of Onesiphorus these believers are the Nucleus of believers in Ephesus in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace.
    - i. Prisca and Priskilla are the same Aquila is Akulas in the Greek originally.
    - ii. These at the time of writing were believer in Ephesus who had reached Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace where Timothy was pastor.
  3. Akula in Greek means EAGLE and along with Prisca he first met Paul when he was living in Corinth.
    - i. When Paul made it to Corinth he was broke and got a job since he was an excellent tent maker and in the tent factory he met Akula the Eagle and how they came to know each other **Acts 18:2**
    - ii. Aquila was a native of Pontis and a tent maker by trade and at the time of this meeting the couple were Refugees as a result of a cruel and unjust EDICT by Claudius in AD52 who expelled all JEWS from Rome.
    - iii. For this reason Claudius was Poisoned by his wife so that her son NERO could become Emperor.
    - iv. AKULA or Aquila is not a Jewish name but he was apparently a Jewish citizen who took a Roman name EAGLE akula.
    - v. Eagle is always associated with the GREATNESS of Rome and every Roman regiment had it's Eagle as its Roman standard.
  4. Having been driven out of Rome by the edict of Claudius they met Paul in Corinth and being of the same trade they not only became acquainted but Paul led them both to Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God
    - i. When Paul left Corinth the couple went with him **Acts 18:18**
    - ii. After settling in Ephesus the couple came to know Apollos whom was a very Eloquent Pastor Teacher but was limited in his understanding of Bible Doctrine and they took him aside to teach him more Bible Doctrine to align it with his eloquence **Acts 18:24-26**
    - iii. One of the great things about Apollos who was very eloquent and able to hold the attention of great crowds was that he was TEACHABLE and not arrogant.
  5. Paul in writing the Epistle to the Romans sent a greeting to Prisca and Aquila who were in Rome on business. **Rom 16:3-4**
    - i. Somewhere along the line this couple rescued Paul from some thing and stuck their necks out for him
  6. When Paul wrote to the Corinthians from Ephesus the church was meeting in the home of Prisca and Aquila at that time **1Cor 16:19 compared 1Cor 16:8**
    - i. This couple were a blessing to the early church wherever they went and wherever they were the local church would meet in their house.

7. Therefore Acclaim Prisca and Aquila is a recognition that these 2 are part of the Nucleus which holds together the local church as its glue.
8. These 2 are also a monument to the principle of Category II Love and are obviously a case of Right Man and Right Woman and reflect all the blessings which can accrue to believers in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace who fulfill all the requirements of Category II Love.
  - i. Their courage, nobility, capacity for life and their wonderful relationship was a blessing for all around them.
  - ii. The nucleus of believers in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace in Ephesus formed the basis for blessing of that local church and NO ONE more than these 2.
  - iii. This is a case where the Man and Woman were both a blessing.
  - iv. This is rare and most cases see the man as a blessing and the woman as a pain in the neck or the woman as a blessing and the man as a jackass.
  - v. To get both as the blessing as Super Grace believers is amazing.
9. They contributed greatly to all those around them by blessing by association.
- D. In addition there was an entire family in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace
  1. Onesiphorus was a benefit to the church in Ephesus before he went to Rome and actually gave his life for Paul. **2Tim 1:16-18**
  2. Obviously Onesiphorus was a Martyr in Rome as a result of Helping Paul there.
  3. His family survived him and are under blessing by association with him since he is with the Lord.
  4. Since he was a believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace his family is doing well in Ephesus and his blessing by association goes down to his wife and children who have the perfect security of blessing by association with him.
  5. His family survived him to become a part of the great nucleus of Super Grace believer in Ephesus.
- E. This verse depicts Status Quo Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace in relationship to 2 Divine Institutions:
  1. Marriage by Prisca and Aquila
  2. Family by the family of Onesiphorus
  3. Not only does the stability of any nation depend on these 2 areas of Laws of Divine Establishment but also spiritual stability and progress depend on Divine Institution #2&3.
- F. Other KEY Super Grace believers are mentioned in the Roman empire now and the Super Grace nucleus is scattered at this moment in church history and Paul is about to leave the scene where Ultra Super Grace believers have had such a dynamic impact.
  1. It is therefore imperative that he mention key places where stability of Key leadership has had such a great effect.

**2Tim 4:19**

**v19: Timothy, Acclaim Priskilla and Aquila, also the family of Onesiphorus.**

**Lesson #104      Series # 469      5/9/2019      2Tim 4:20 – End of Series**

- I. Doctrine of Refreshment:
  - A. Definition:
    1. In English it generally connotes food and beverage or a light meal.
    2. In the bible it means to restore the strength of soul or revive the Divine Viewpoint in the inner life of the believer.
    3. It is accomplished both with Bible Doctrine and Christian fellowship.
    4. It means to supply what is necessary for spiritual blessing in time and to be able to handle disaster of adversity.

5. The meaning generally is one of “reviving the soul”.
- B. Alleviation of Saul’s Psychosis.
1. This is refreshment to a believer in reversionism and the thing which refreshed this reversionist was good music. **1Sam 16:23**
    - i. The evil spirit from God here is the permissive principle of the control of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ over history allowing the function of demon influence in Saul.
  2. This was “music therapy” which caused temporary alleviation of the symptoms of psychosis described in terms of refreshment.
    - i. This is therefore SOUL recovery from an adverse condition here with Saul reversionistic psychosis or neurosis.
    - ii. It always refers to some form of soul recovery as soul blessing.
  3. The problem of psychosis is still present and Saul was only one example of it in the world.
    - i. Some think it is disgraceful for a believer to be psychotic and that he should never consult with any physicians and they think Bible Doctrine will take care of everything.
    - ii. When you are sick and have an ailment you see a doctor and avoid stupidity.
    - iii. Don’t get the idea that there is something sinful or evil when you are sick.
    - iv. There are many good reasons for being sick that have nothing to do with Divine Discipline or reversionism or EVIL in the believer.
- C. Proverbs 25:13 Parabolic Tristitch where the first line illustrates the 2<sup>nd</sup> and 3<sup>rd</sup> lines.

**Prov 25:13**

**v13: Like the ice cold water of melted snow brought to the workers by the water boy, in the HOT time of harvest; is a faithful messenger servant or the Pastor Teacher, to those who send for him, the congregation; he refreshes the souls of his masters.**

1. Refreshment is always connected with the soul.
  2. This is an analogy between the water boy during the hot days of harvest who brings ice water to the workers and the communicator of Bible Doctrine providing spiritual refreshment to the soul through the communication of Bible Doctrine.
  3. This is the delineation of the Pastor Teacher as a SLAVE of the Lord Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
    - i. The properly oriented Pastor Teacher will understand and feel that being a slave to the Lord Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ is the best situation in life.
    - ii. The teaching of Bible Doctrine is the key to the ministry of refreshment and the water boy is the analogy here.
  4. Be aware that you cannot leave your work and go to the mountain to get ice for ice water and you cannot go to the canon of scripture yourself and get any significant level of spiritual advance.
    - i. In order to understand the content of the Canon of Scripture the believer must find and consistently get under the authority and teaching of HIS RIGHT Pastor Teacher who is properly prepared and who can DIG out the policies, information, principles and doctrines which God has placed there in the ORIGINAL LANGUAGES and communicate them to the believer.
    - ii. The worst delusion of fundamentalist Christian is that if you memorize 1000 verses you will be a mature believer.
    - iii. Memorizing is good for self discipline but it has no spiritual connotation from simply memorizing verses.
    - iv. In order to grow up in the Spiritual Life you must be under the strict academic discipline of the local church.
- D. Rejection of refreshment means National Discipline, **Is 28:8-14**

1. This describes the Northern Kingdom of Israel in analogy

Is 28:8-14

v8: All tables are full of filthy vomit, there is not a clean place on the tables or the floor.

v9: To whom shall he teach knowledge, to whom shall be caused to understand the doctrine of the message, those children just weaned from the milk, NO! those children just taken from the mothers Breast? NO!

v10: For precept of categorical doctrine must be upon precept of categorical doctrine (principles built on categorical teaching), precept of categorical doctrine upon precept of categorical doctrine, line of exegetical teaching must be upon line of exegetical teaching (teaching Bible Doctrine expository methods), line of exegetical teaching upon line of exegetical teaching, a little teaching here, a little teaching there.

v11: For with jabbering or stammering lips of alien articulation and by means of gentile foreign languages and other languages will He speak to this people about the 5<sup>th</sup> cycle of Divine Discipline, and communicate Bible Doctrine to this people (The Gift of Tongues a Sign of the coming of the 5<sup>th</sup> cycle of discipline)

v12: to whom, Israel, he has said, "This doctrinal teaching is the rest or refreshment; therefore give rest to the weary; therefore this is refreshment"; but they would not hear even things refreshing or stimulating.

v13: However the word of the LORD was still to them precept of categorical teaching upon precept of categorical teaching, precept upon precept, line of exegetical teaching upon line of exegetical teaching, line upon line, a little teaching of a daily portion here, a little teaching of a daily portion there; that upon rejection of it they might go into reversionism, and fall backward into apostasy, and be torn up by evil, therefore snared by reversionism and finally captured and destroyed by their enemies

v14: Therefore hear the word of the LORD, you scoffers with Negative Volition to Bible Doctrine, who rule this people in Jerusalem (Acts 3:19), repent and change your mind about Bible Doctrine and return and recover from your reversionism in order that your sins might be wiped away and that times of refreshment may come from the presence of the Lord!

2. Children cannot understand Bible Doctrine having no vocabulary with which to understand.
3. God said in this passage that the next time the Jews were going out under the 5<sup>th</sup> cycle of Divine Discipline he would present to them the gospel of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ in foreign languages, a jabbering lip.
  - i. This began on the day of Pentecost for evangelism of the Jews living in foreign nations in those languages.
  - ii. The TRUE gift of tongues was presenting the gospel of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ in a foreign language to Jews who understood the foreign language having lived in a foreign nation and given by believers who DID NOT understand that language.
  - iii. Since these Jews were not interested in Bible Doctrine from their own scriptures in their own Jewish language, the purpose of this Spiritual Gift of Tongues was to give them the doctrine and gospel in foreign languages as a WARNING of the coming of the 5<sup>th</sup> cycle of Divine Discipline.
  - iv. This was the purpose and function of this spiritual gift and when the Jews went out in 70 AD under the 5<sup>th</sup> cycle of Divine Discipline NO ONE has had this gift since then and all the nonsense which occurs today is either satanically inspired or a matter of individual psychosis.
4. The only way refreshment for the believer can occur is through the consistent intake of Bible Doctrine.

E. The response to the word of God is called refreshment **Rom 15:32, 2Cor 7:13**

F. The believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace has a ministry of refreshment, **1Cor 16:17-18, Philemon 7, 2Tim 1:16**

II. The nucleus of Super Grace believers and their locations as Paul is about to leave this life continued.

A. Paul is about to leave the scene of history having had a most dynamic impact greater than anyone in history.

1. There are need however for other believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace in other areas for support of the local area and history.

B. Erastos was a VIP in Corinth and Treasurer of the City of Corinth.

1. He is associated with Timothy being sent with him from Ephesus to Macedonia Acts 19:22
  2. Having sent to Macedonia 2 who ministered there Timothy and Erastos Paul stayed in Asia for a while.
  3. Writing to Rome from Corinth Paul concludes Rom 16:23, a greeting from Erastos as city treasurer.
  4. According to this passage Erastos continued in Corinth as a spiritual leader and stabilizer Super Grace hero and probably an Ultra Super Grace believer at this time.
  5. These believers are all scattered out in the world and for a while they were together and had good times together to remember in traveling with Paul.
  6. This is a new game all the way and these great men are scattered all over in KEY spots to minister in those areas after Paul is gone.
  7. The result is that Corinth will have dynamic spiritual leadership from the Ultra Super Grace believer Erastos.
  8. These names may only be named one time in scripture but these are GREAT believers whom we will recognize in eternity as VIPs.
  9. Being in Super Grace or Ultra Super Grace he has maximum production in Corinth and will be a key in this function.
- C. From the scattering of Super Grace and Ultra Super Grace believer we can see that there is coming for the Roman empire GREAT historical blessing.
- D. Trophimos was a native of Ephesus and accompanied Paul on his 3<sup>rd</sup> missionary journey, Acts 20:4, 21:29.
1. He was the innocent cause of a riot in Jerusalem by which Paul was arrested and taken into custody by the Roman soldiers Acts 21:27-
  2. He was with Paul on his release from Roman imprisonment in AD63 and traveled the famous Ignation highway to Philippi and then to Ephesus and Colossi and other areas.
  3. The next year he went with Paul to Marseillaises and then to Spain and was with Paul 2 years in Spain and came back with Paul to Ephesus.
  4. This was why Timothy was left in command of the Ephesian church since Paul had to leave Trophimos behind in Miletus the sea port 30 miles from Ephesus.
- E. The GREAT PEAL OFF:
1. Timothy at Ephesus 1Tim 1:3
  2. Titus is at Crete Tit 1:4-5
  3. Trophimos is at Miletus 2Tim 4;20
  4. Erastus is at Corinth 2Tim 4;20
  5. Krekes has gone to Galatia 2Tim 4:10
  6. Titus is in Dalmatia 2Tim 4:10
  7. Tychicus is going to Ephesus so that Timothy can become a traveling Pastor Teacher 2Tim 4;12
- F. NEVER attach adverse significance to ILLNESS in a believer and in this case Trophimos was in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace or even Ultra Super Grace at this time.
1. His illness does not connote either carnality or failure on his part of any type of Divine Discipline.
  2. The concept that illness is to have EVIL in your body is found in the African cultures who had medicine men who drove demons out of your body, from Christian Science, and others.
    - i. For these idiots being sick was a sign of evil in the body.
  3. Many believers in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and Ultra Super Grace get sick therefore beware of judging illness in believers. **Phil 2:25-30**
  4. The illness of Apaphroditis had nothing to do with carnality or reversionism but was a testing which comes to many believers in history.

5. Beware of judging people who are sick in order that you do not come under great Divine Discipline yourself.
- G. Timothy WILL come to Paul but Paul encourages him to come BEFORE the next WINTER.
1. Nero will die in June of AD68 Paul will die in Spring of AD68
  2. Paul has already been condemned to die and it is a matter of 30 to 60 days before he will be executed as a Roman citizen by decapitation.
  3. He is very calm about his own death and under dying grace and does want to talk to Timothy who will replace him as a Pastor Teacher.
  4. Paul does not ever suffer from SELF PITY with regard to the death he has been condemned to.
- H. Eubulus is one of 4 believers in Rome who continue to be faithful to Paul in spite of mass desertion of the reversionistic believer in the Roman church.
1. He is a believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace obvious because of his courage, stability, honor, and integrity in standing by Paul in a time of inconvenience.
  2. It is possible that he has knowledge in the field of law and was Paul's attorney who defended him before NERO.
  3. Eubulus, Pudens, Linus, and Claudia all 4 believers in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Salute Timothy and the Church at Ephesus
  4. These were all believers of honor and integrity.
  5. Pudens was possibly the officer of the Roman empire under the emperor Claudius.
  6. The Wife of Pudens, Claudia and these 2 as husband and wife are a team again one being a Roman officer and Claudia being a famous English woman.
  7. Linos was the Pastor Teacher of the Roman church and Claudia was his mother.
  8. Claudia as wife of Pudens and mother of Linus and all 3 mentioned in the epigram of Marshall.
  9. She was daughter of a British King, Cognibunus who sent her to Rome to be educated and to get her away from the barbaric England at that time.
  10. She was sponsored at the Court of Caesar by Pompynilia the wife of the Roman commander of Brittain Allus Plodius and they are a family of believers in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace.
  11. They all being famous prove the principle that success need not spoil a believer.
- I. We must always ask self "When God provides our Super Grace blessing package upon our reaching Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God giving us all the 4 initial categories of blessings will these SPOIL you"?
1. It should not since Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul gives capacity for life and you cannot be spoiled by life as long as you have resident Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
  2. However what really spoils the individual is when they stop noting the Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Frame of Reference of the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and start listening to the FLATTERY of those around them.
  3. ONE OF THE GREATEST DANGERS IN ANY AREA OF SUCCESS IS TO PAY ATTENTION TO FLATTERY.
  4. Once this starts it begins to wind up the LUST pattern of the Old Sin Nature so that Approbation and Power Lust become very strong.
  5. This starts to close down the function of Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul
  6. Bible Doctrine leaves the Frame of Reference and memory centers with vocabulary and categories set aside and the norms and standards are pushed down and nothing exist on the launch pad so that SUCCESS destroys these people.

7. This occurs a great deal of time in the entertainment field and in the field of Pastor Teacher functions when they are complemented by the congregation.

8. These 4 believers were NOT spoiled by success.

### III. The Last thing Paul Wrote:

A. The principle: Death does not stop the Plan of God.

1. The day that Paul died was a sad day for his friends, loved ones and the ancient church BUT IT DID NOT STOP THE PLAN OF GOD.

2. Paul has been dead since AD68 almost 2000 years ago and the Plan of God goes right on.

3. There is NO ONE who is irreplaceable in the Plan of God and no believer whose departure from the scene who will hinder the Plan of God.

4. There is no believer dying no matter how great he is, no pastor, bible teacher, no one as any cog in any wheel which so important as to stop the Plan of God.

5. The Plan of God will go on with our without you or I or any pastor or other believer and NOTHING hinders the Plan of God.

6. We must recognize and understand this principle under the concept of Bible Doctrine so that any time we begin to think the Plan of God cannot role without you then serious Divine Discipline is coming your way.

7. The thing which makes the Protocol Plan of God important is Bible Doctrine and his plan goes right on with our without any one of us.

8. WE can ride along or jump off in reversionism and BURN.

9. The only way to ride along is through the Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine constantly and consistently, DAILY.

10. There will always be someone teaching Bible Doctrine and believers growing because of Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine.

11. LIFE WILL ALWAYS GO ON.

B. Paul has gone right into the presence of the Lord and awaits those highest decorations of all of human history.

1. The principle is that we must **ALWAYS LIVE LIFE IN THE LIGHT OF ETERNITY.**

2. When eternity takes you and sweeps you out of life you can be sure that the Plan of God will roll right along and nothing can stop it.

C. In his final and last written words there is great emphasis on the LIVING and WRITTEN Word of God, Bible Doctrine and Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.

1. These 2 things are essential for advance to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace

i. Continual Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine

ii. Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ which comes from maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.

2. This emphasizes how you can take any blessing or disaster of any kind in life IF you have in your Human Spirit Bible Doctrine being pumped into your Right Lobe

i. No situation in life can effect your life

ii. The Lord will always be here and Bible Doctrine will always be here.

iii. Paul is leaving this life but these things will always be here.

iv. This is not the hypocrisy of phony believer who say to you, "the Lord bless or be with you brother".

3. This is in effect saying that the Lord will always be here and as a believer in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ your Human Spirit will always be here and as a mechanism for the intake of Bible Doctrine you will always be able to push this into the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.

4. You will still have Bible Doctrine and therefore you will still have the Lord.



5. HE is saying my departure from life will NOT stop the Plan of God.
- D. These 2 prepositional phrases are interesting in that in the first it is singular and the 2<sup>nd</sup> plural.
1. The 2<sup>nd</sup> is addressed to the entire Royal Family of God.
  2. Paul about to die is saying that after he is gone there will STILL be GRACE as the Plan of God marches on.
  3. Great believers will die in every generation but there will still be GRACE left for all believers.
  4. There will never be a time when GRACE stops or runs out nor when the Plan of God stops for any reason ever.
- E. Within 30 to 60 days Paul was brought to a Roman court and assigned a lichter which was a punishment in the Roman court.
1. The lichter carried over his shoulder a bundle of sticks to whipping
  2. In addition he carried an AXE to decapitate
  3. He wore a military uniform as well.
  4. On this day in the spring in Rome he carried ONLY the axe and was assigned to Paul.
  5. Paul was then marched out of the city on the Via Ostia the road to the seaport of Rome.
  6. This was the end of one of the greatest people of all time and he departed at about Age 70.
  7. Clement of Rome a writer of a later time describes the tradition handed down.
    - i. Weeping friends stood by at a distance and took up his corpse and carried it for burial to the subterranean labyrinth of graves in ROME.
    - ii. Paul is buried in ROME NOT PETER.
- F. DEATH DOES NOT HINDER THE PLAN OF GOD.

**2Tim 4:20**

**v20: Eras'tos remained at Corinth; but I have left behind Troph'imus at Mile'tus because he kept on being ill.**

**2Tim 4:21**

**v21: Hurry, do your best, make ever effort to come before winter. Eubu'lus salutes or greets you, also Pudens also Linus also Claudia also all the advancing believers.**

**2Tim 4:22**

**v22: The Lord be with your spirit. (elliptical no verb), The GRACE be with ya'all (again elliptical)**

**END OF SERIES**